

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

THE COMEDY OF MUCEDORUS

REVISED AND EDITED

WITH INTRODUCTION AND NOTES

BY

KARL WARNKE, PH. D.

AND

LUDWIG PROESCHOLDT, PH. D.

UNIV. OF CALIFORNIA
AT LOS ANGELES
LIBRARY

HALLE:

MAX NIEMEYER.

1878.

PR
2345
A1
1878

eh 3/1/2

TO

PROFESSOR KARL ELZE, PH. D.

THIS EDITION OF 'MUCEDORUS'

IS INSCRIBED

IN TOKEN OF THEIR HIGH ESTEEM AND

SINCERE GRATITUDE

BY

THE EDITORS.

St. & N.

NOV 3 '42 English Dept.

2 V. 1. 1.

420896

INTRODUCTION.

THE earliest known edition of the comedy of Mucedorus was published in 1598, with the title: A Most pleasant Comedie of Mucedorus the kings sonne of Valentia and Amadine the king's daughter of Arragon, with the merie conceites of Mouse. Newly set foorth, as it hath bin sundrie times plaide in the honorable Cittie of London. Very delectable and full of mirth. London Printed for William Jones, dwelling at Holborne conduit, at the signe of the Gunne. 1598. 4^o (QA). As appears from the words *newly set foorth*, the *Editio Princeps* of the play has been lost and we must now consider the edition of 1598 as such. A second edition, mentioned by Dyce¹⁾, was issued in 1606 (QB); it bears the same title as QA, of which it seems to have been a mere reprint. In the beginning of the reign of king James I, several additions were made to the play, and it was published again in 1609 (QC) and in 1610 (QD), the latter edition being entitled: A Most pleasant Comedie of Mucedorus the kings sonne of Valentia, and Amadine the kings daughter of Aragon. With the merry conceites of Mouse. Amplified with new additions, as it was acted before the king's Maiestie at White-hall on Shroue-Sunday night. By his Highnes Seruants vsually playing at the Globe. Very delectable, and full of conceited Mirth. Imprinted at London for William Jones, dwelling neare Holborne Conduit, at the signe of the Gunne. 1610. 4^o.

The scenes added in these editions are: 1. The Prologue. — 2. The dialogue between Mucedorus and Anselmo (I, 1). — 3. The soliloquy of Mouse (I, 2). — 4. The scene in which Anselmo com-

¹⁾ The Works of Beaumont and Fletcher, The Knight of the Burning Pestle. Note to the Induction.

municates to the distressed king of Valentia the reason of the clandestine departure of his son (IV, 1). — 5. The last scene of the play was amplified in QC by the introduction of the king of Valentia with his train just at the moment, when the king of Arragon has bestowed the hand of his daughter Amadine on Mucedorus. The introduction of the king of Valentia and of Anselmo who do not appear in the two earliest editions, at the same time made it necessary to raise the original number of eight actors (in QA) to ten (in QC). — 6. The epilogue, from l. 14, has been altered.

From this altered form of the epilogue, we learn the occasion on which the new scenes were added. 'A comedy', says the late R. Simpson ²⁾, 'by some poet unaccustomed to write for the company, had been acted at the Globe, and afterwards at court before the king himself. It was full of dark sentences for which the actors were delated to the magistrate, to their great danger. And on occasion of their being admitted to act again at court, they presented the old, inoffensive Mucedorus as their peace-offering, with an elaborate excuse for their error.' (Epilogue ll. 15—77.) R. Simpson then goes on to enumerate several plays of a scandalous character which were performed at the Globe between the publication of Mucedorus in 1606 and the issue of the edition of 1610; it is however difficult to say which of them had given the offence alluded to in the epilogue.

From the very beginning, the comedy of Mucedorus, probably on account of 'the merry conceits of Mouse', seems to have been highly popular. An allusion to this effect is found in Beaumont and Fletcher's drama: *The Knight of the Burning Pestle*, first acted in 1611, in the Induction of which the wife of a citizen says with regard to her husband's apprentice: 'Nay, gentlemen, he hath play'd before, my husband says, Mucedorus, before the wardens of our company'. — Another proof of the great popularity which, for more than half a century, our play enjoyed, consists in the great number of editions still extant. Not even the period during which the theatres were closed, and in which so many old plays sank into oblivion, deprived the comedy of Mucedorus of the esteem in which it was held by the play-going public: for in

²⁾ Pseudo-Shaksperian Dramas. In: *The Academy*, Apr. 29, 1876, p. 401.

1663, it was performed at Witney in Oxfordshire³); and what is still more surprising, at a time when the French taste had already completely taken hold of the English stage, in the same year in which the first playwright of the Restoration — Sir William Davenant — died, a new edition of our play was published (1668). The editions issued between 1610 and 1668 are the following: 1613 (QE), 1615 (QF), 1619 (QG), 1621 (QH), 1629 (QI), 1634 (QK), 1639 (QL), 1668 (QM). — Qq EFGIKLM are enumerated by Halliwell⁴); QH is contained in a miscellaneous volume belonging to the Municipal Library of Dantzic and bearing the press-mark: *Comœdiæ Anglicanæ XVII. F. 5. q.* Professor Elze, who thinks this copy to be unique, had a transcript made of it in 1859, which has been mentioned by Professor Delius in the Introduction to his edition of our play: and the only two English critics that refer to the edition of 1621 — R. Simpson and Professor Ward⁵) — probably owe their knowledge of it to that introduction.

Of these twelve old editions only QH has been accessible to us in the original, whilst Qq ACDM have become known to us either through reprints or collations.

QA forms the basis of the reprint of our play in Dodsley's *Select Collection of Old English Plays*, ed. by W. Carew Hazlitt (vol. VII, London 1874). Throughout the play, Mr. Hazlitt has modernized the old spelling, now and then he has corrected an evident blunder of QA, not however without regularly giving the reading of the Ed. Pr. in a note, so that with the aid of his edition the reader is able to reconstrue the text of QA. In the arrangement of the lines, in particular, he has not deviated from QA, giving as prose several passages which without doubt are to be

³) On that occasion, some persons lost their lives by an unfortunate accident, a catastrophe which was made the subject of a pamphlet by an Oxfordshire clergyman under the title: *Tragi-Comœdia. Being a brief relation of the strange and wonderful hand of God, discovered at Witney in the Comedy acted February the third, where there were some slaine, many hurt, and several other remarkable passages.* See Collier, *Annals of the Stage*, II, 118 seq.

⁴) *Dictionary of Old English Plays.*

⁵) *A History of English Dramatic Literature.* London 1875, I, 458 seq. Professor Ward erroneously states that the 'new additions' only consisted of the Prologue, and of the opening and concluding dialogue between Comedy and Envy, and that these scenes were first published in the edition of 1621.

read as verse, and not choosing, when printing verse, to restore the regular blank verse in cases where it was easy to do so. Not content, however, only to give the text of QA, he has taken the pains to collate it with QD, from which he has derived the passages not contained in QA.

QC has lately been reprinted for subscribers by Mr. J. Payne Collier, who has likewise modernized the old spelling, and, beside a short introductory notice in which he claims one of the scenes first printed in QC (IV, 1) for Shakespeare, has added a few notes and conjectures; as for the rest, Mr. Collier has made no attempt to restore that form of the old play which originally it must have borne, even if penned by the humblest of all Elizabethan playwrights.

As to QH Professor Elze has not only with great liberality lent us his transcript, but has also most kindly procured the original from Dantzic for our inspection. After having once more compared the transcript with the original, we think we are allowed to consider it to be as faithful as can be. The title of QH differs from that of QD only in the imprint (London, Printed for John Wright, and are to be sold at his shop without Newgate at the signe of the Bible).

Professor Delius, to whom we owe the first German edition of our play⁶⁾, has formed his text from QM, the title of which agrees with that of QD except in the imprint, which runs as follows: London, Printed by C. O. for Francis Coles, and are to be sold at his shop in Winestreet near Hatton-garden 1668. In his introduction, Professor Delius discusses the hypothesis of Tieck on the authorship of our play and gives a survey of the different editions, as far as he knew them. As for the text of the play, he has compared QM with the transcript of Professor Elze, giving some of the variations as well as some conjectures of his own and of Professor Elze's on pp. XII—XIV; substantially, however, his edition may be considered as a reprint of the last quarto edition of 1668.

As there can be no doubt that QA is superior to all subsequent editions, we have followed it as closely as possible, adopting

⁶⁾ Pseudo-Shaksperesche Dramen. Herausgegeben von Nicolaus Delius. Viertes Heft: Mucedorus. Elberfeld 1874.

the reading of the other Qq only in cases where the text of QA is obviously corrupt. For brevity's sake, we quote Mr. Hazlitt's reprint as A, Mr. Collier's reprint as C, Professor Delius' edition as M, and the Qq of 1610 and 1621 as D and H. In most cases we have deemed it sufficient in the notes only to indicate the readings of those Qq which differ from that to which we have given the preference.

The corrupted text and the deficient versification of our play have, in part, been restored by Professor Wagner⁷⁾ and Professor Elze⁸⁾. As a number of the emendations proposed by these learned gentlemen seem to be incontestable, we have not hesitated to prefer them to the readings of the Qq, particularly in cases in which the latter are not in unison with one another; such conjectures, however, as seemed to be of a more doubtful character, have been embodied in the notes. In the notes we have also given some suggestions with which Professor Elze and some of our friends have privately favoured us. For those emendations, lastly, which have been given without an author's name, we are answerable ourselves.

The question as to the author of our play has been repeatedly discussed; but as cogent arguments are absolutely wanting, it is not likely ever to be brought to a satisfactory close. Among the different hypotheses put forth both in England and Germany, we are able to distinguish three principal groups. There are, or to speak more correctly, there were some critics who attributed the whole of the play to no meaner poet than to Shakespeare; others, particularly English scholars, think it not improbable that the scenes added in the edition of 1609, were written by Shakespeare, whilst a third group of critics hold that the great English poet had nothing at all to do with our comedy, but that some other of the Elizabethan dramatists — Lodge, Greene, or Peele — composed it in the beginning of his dramatical career.

The principal advocate of the first hypothesis was the German poet Tieck. Highly meritorious as his efforts were to make his countrymen acquainted with the works of the great English bard,

⁷⁾ Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XI, 59—70: Ueber und zu Mucedorus.

⁸⁾ Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XIII, 45—91: Noten und Conjecturen. We have enjoyed the advantage of using a separate impression of these Notes; the volume itself will only be published some weeks hence.

yet it is well known that, guided by nothing but his own individual taste, he attributed to Shakespeare a number of plays which certainly were not written by him. To these plays belongs the comedy of Mucedorus. In the second part of Tieck's novel: *Dichtersleben*, Shakespeare is made to confess to the Earl of Southampton that, when still at Stratford, he wrote the singular play of Mucedorus, and that after the lapse of many years when he chanced to be present at a performance of it, he was struck with astonishment to see the long-forgotten comedy meet with great applause⁹). Setting aside the poetical frame of this passage, we may, with Professor Delius, infer two facts from it, firstly that Tieck believed Shakespeare to have been the author of the play, and then, that he did not think it quite worthless. Turning to the external evidence which may have led Tieck to that supposition, we know that none of the old editions gives on its title Shakespeare as the author of the play; nor is any allusion to that effect to be found in contemporary writers. The only fact that speaks in favour of Tieck's hypothesis, is the circumstance of a volume having existed in the library of K. Charles II, containing Mucedorus together with the comedies of *The Merry Devil of Edmonton* and *Fair Em*, which was labelled *Shakespeare, Vol. I.*¹⁰). It is not likely that the book-binder should have given the volume this inscription on his own authority: on the contrary, we may suppose that he was instructed to do so by the original owner of the book. But we are entirely ignorant, who that owner was and whether he did not attribute the three plays to Shakespeare merely on the same ground on which many other plays have been ascribed to him, viz. because they had been represented at the Globe. That, moreover, Shakespeare was not generally considered as the author of the three comedies, becomes evident from the fact that the editors of the third Folio of Shakespeare's works, although ad-

⁹) It forms a singular contrast to the intimate knowledge which Tieck evidently possessed of our play, that Schlegel in his *Lectures on Dramatic Art* (II, 2, 240, German edition of 1809) is obliged to own that he never saw this comedy and therefore feels unable to pronounce an opinion of it.

¹⁰) This volume afterwards passed to the British Museum, where it has been broken up to allow the plays to be separately bound. Malone's *Shakespeare* by Boswell (1821) II, 682. Simpson, *School of Shakspeare* II, 339 and 404. According to Simpson, *Transactions of the New Shakspeare Society* 1875—6, p. 157 the label was *Shakespeare, Vol. II.*

These instances will be sufficient to show that in almost all the scenes, at least in the original play before it was amplified, alliterative lines are to be met with. Now, alliteration is a figure of speech of which Shakespeare never made use, except once in *Love's Labour's Lost* IV, 2 (in the well-known lines, beginning:

The preylful princess pierc'd and prick'd a pretty pleasing pricket) in order to characterize and ridicule his Holofernes. If therefore now-a-days there should be critics bold enough to assert Shakespeare to have been the author of our play, this grammatical test would of itself, we think, suffice to refute them.

The second of the above mentioned theories seems to boast of more supporters than the one just discussed: two English critics, at least, ascribe the scenes first published in QC to Shakespeare. These critics are the late R. Simpson, who on different occasions¹¹⁾ turned his attention to our play, and Mr. Collier who takes IV, 1 to have been Shakespeare's contribution.¹²⁾ Indeed every reader, however cursorily examining our play, must be struck with the different tone and style of these scenes. Professor Wagner¹³⁾, although not acquainted with the different editions, points out IV, 1 as the only scene in which the diction rises above the usual triviality and becomes somewhat more graceful and elegant. He might have added that also the latter part of the Epilogue is written in a more racy and vigorous style than the rest. Besides, alliteration is very rarely, if at all, to be met with in the new scenes.¹⁴⁾ If, on the other side, it is true that also in these scenes the passages in which sense and metre are deficient, are by no means wanting, we must bear in mind that, in all probability, this is rather the fault of the old editors, than that of the author. Mr. Hazlitt, therefore, is wrong when saying¹⁵⁾: 'Whether the

¹¹⁾ *School of Shakspeare* II, 404 seqq. — *The Academy* April 29, 1876, p. 401 seq. — *Transactions of the New Shakspeare Society* 1875—6, pp. 157—160.

¹²⁾ Mr. Collier is mistaken in stating in the Introductory Notice to his edition of *Mucedorus*, that IV, 1 is the only scene not contained in QA.

¹³⁾ *Shakespeare-Jahrbuch* XI, 61.

¹⁴⁾ The following passages in I, 1: But faith plant firmer; ib. My resolution brooks no battery; ib. breed a blemish; ib. lock thy lips — are hardly to be considered as instances of alliteration.

¹⁵⁾ In a short note on the titles of the two old copies which he used in preparing his edition.

additions and corrections were the work of the original writer, or of some one else is uncertain; but it does not appear improbable that they were the author's.' On the contrary, it is certain that the author of the original play did not add the scenes in question; whether, however, we are entitled to consider them as Shakespeare's is a question which is to be considered apart.

R. Simpson (School of Shakspeare II, 404) says: 'The old play is too bad to be Shakespeare's, unless it was written in his very earliest days, yet the additions in the edition of 1610 have in them a ring quite consistent with Shakespeare's authorship, who, too good an artist to patch cloth of frieze with cloth of gold, yet could hardly help showing a fibre of his golden vein in anything that he scribbled.' R. Simpson expresses himself in a similar way in the Transactions of the New Shakspeare Society and in the Academy. Although he owns in the latter paper that the additions, though far superior to the old play, yet 'bear no internal evidence of being Shakespeare's', and that 'there might have been many poets attached to the Globe in 1605—10 capable of this and much better', yet on the same occasion he gives us the reasons which seem to him to 'add some slight weight to the tradition that Shakespeare was the author of those scenes.' He does not think it impossible that Shakespeare was the head-manager of the King's Company at the time when the offence alluded to was given to the court, and that therefore it naturally devolved on him to extricate the players from their difficulty. 'It must be confessed that the *molestation of the ashes* in l. 2 is like the *molestation of the unchafed flood* in Othello II, 1, and that the use of the word *sight* has a Shakespearian twang.' To these arguments may be fitly added the one brought forward by Mr. Collier. As has already been mentioned, he supposes only IV, 1 to have been added to the old play, which scene on account of its diction and more particularly on account of the use of the word *extolment* (which besides the passage in question only occurs in Hamlet IV, 2) he thinks to have been contributed by Shakespeare. These arguments would, even if advanced in a greater number, be far from proving Shakespeare's authorship; besides if we are not mistaken, there is a difference to be recognised in the use of the word *molestation* in Othello and Mucedorus. The passages referred to are:

For do but stand upon the foaming shore
 The chidden billow seems to pelt the clouds,
 The wind-shaked surge with high and monstrous mane
 Seems to cast water on the burning bear,
 And quench the guards of the ever-fixed pole:
 I never did like molestation view
 On the enchaſed flood.

OTHELLO II, I.

Mirth to a ſoul diſturbed is embers turned
 Which ſudden gleam with moleſtation.

MUCEDORUS IV, I.

The expreſſion which to R. Simpson ſeemed to have a Shakeſpearian twang is contained in the following line:

But ſooner loſe their ſight for it.

The earlieſt known edition (1609), however, that contains this line, inſtead of *ſight* reads *light*, which has alſo been independently conjectured by Profeſſor Elze. Both Mr. Simpson and Mr. Collier confine their remarks to IV, 1: but, if it be aſſumed that Shakeſpeare added this ſcene, it muſt alſo be aſſumed that he wrote I, 1 and 2, as well as the concluſions of the play and of the epilogue. In theſe ſcenes, however, no critic has as yet diſcovered a ſpark of Shakeſpeare's genius. On the contrary Mr. Collier expreſſly ſays: 'All other portions of the drama [with the exception of IV, 1] are clearly by an inferior hand and in a much humbler and comparatively barbarous ſtyle'; alſo Mr. R. Simpson has not been able to point out lines in I, 1 and 2 and in the concluſion of the play as being not unworthy of the great poet. We have remarked indeed that the diction in the latter part of the epilogue is different from that of the reſt of the play, but it rather calls to mind the inflation of ſtyle ſo frequently to be met with in the works of the precuſors of Shakeſpeare. Moreover, there is one point in the verſification of our play which ſpeaks againſt Shakeſpeare's authorſhip. Both authors — he who compoſed the old play, as well as he who added the new ſcenes — had a predilection for rhyme. According to Abbott, Shakeſpearian Grammar § 515, Shakeſpeare made uſe of rhyme only in two caſes, viz. as an effective termination at the end of the ſcene, and as a conventional means to mark an aſide. In our play, however, rhyme frequently occurs, alſo in the middle of a ſcene, without any reaſon for its uſe being diſcernible.

Considering all this, we must confess that there is just as little evidence, either external or internal, for Shakespeare's authorship of the scenes first added in QC, as for Tieck's hypothesis that he composed the whole of the play.

The same must be said of the other suggestions as to the author of our play. As all of them lack evidence, and are nothing but mere guesses, it will be sufficient briefly to enumerate them.

Malone thinks Robert Greene to have been the author of our play. He says¹⁶⁾: 'Chettle, in a miscellaneous piece, consisting of prose and verse, entitled *England's Mourning Garment &c.* (1603) shadows Marlowe the poet under the name of Musæus; because he had translated the poem of Hero and Leander, attributed to Musæus: and Robert Greene, under the name of Musidore, doubtless from his having been the author of *Mucedorus*, a play, which has been absurdly attributed to Shakspeare'. Al. Dyce, in his edition of the works of Robert Greene, does not mention the passage just quoted. Simpson (*Transactions of the New Shakspeare Society*) says: 'The poet Mucidore addressed by Chettle in *England's Mourning Garment* is either Thomas Lodge or Robert Greene.' Von Friesen¹⁷⁾ lastly, induced by the frequent use of alliteration, does not think it unlikely that George Peele was the author of our play.

Quite as uncertain as the author of our play, is the date of its composition. The only means by which we are enabled to make a guess at this date consists in the examination both of the verse and of the use which the author has made of the interspersed prose. The clown, as might be expected, speaks in prose throughout the play; and also the other characters when talking to him, generally prefer prose to verse; verses addressed to the clown are very rare. Collen, the Councillor, converses with him in prose in II, 1; in verse in V, 1. The messenger that was to be represented by the same actor as Collen, indiscriminately uses verse and prose in his discourse with the clown (III, 1). It may be added that in the Qq passages which are to be read as prose, are repeatedly printed as verse.

With the exception of the scenes in which the clown, Collen,

¹⁶⁾ Malone, *Life of William Shakspeare* in *Malone's Shakspeare* by Boswell (1821) II, 251 note.

¹⁷⁾ *Shakspeare - Jahrbuch* X, 371.

and the messenger appear, our play has been written in blank-verse. As the blank-verse is quite regular in a number of scenes, particularly in the monologues, we may suppose that where the metre is spoiled, it is not the fault of the author. In many passages, therefore, in which QA prints prose or irregular verse, we have after the example, and very often with the aid of the notes and conjectures, published by Professors Wagner and Elze, tried to restore the blank-verse; as, on the other side, however, the poet apparently did not scruple frequently to admit lines of four or six accents, we have as a rule not attempted to reduce such lines to regular metre, although, as the notes will show, in many cases it would have been easy to do so.

As has been mentioned, both authors agree in their predilection for rhyme; in another point, however, their versification differs: viz. in the admission of double endings which are much more frequent in the additions than in the original play; the latter contains only 23 double endings, whereas in the additions their number amounts to 17. If to this we add the frequent use made of alliteration, we shall hardly be wrong in concluding that our play had been in existence several years before the Ed. Pr. (1598) was published.

The division of our play into acts and scenes which we have introduced, is not to be found in either old or modern editions and we must therefore ask the reader's indulgence if it should not in all points find his approval. In the first act, Mucedorus, in the disguise of a shepherd, leaves his father's court, and, on his arrival in Arragon, saves Amadine by killing the bear. In the second act he dispatches Tremelio who, instigated by Segasto, tries to murder him; Segasto accuses him of murder, but the king pardons that offence, and recompenses Mucedorus for having saved the life of his daughter. On a sudden, however, he changes his mind, and we learn in the third act that Mucedorus is banished from the court. Amadine resolves to follow her lover, but misses him at the appointed place and falls into the hands of Bremo, a wild man. Mucedorus, in the new disguise of a hermit, kills Bremo and sets her free, and immediately after both are discovered by the clown and Segasto, to the latter of whom Mucedorus reveals his princely birth. The fifth act contains the reconciliation of all parties. Although it is true that the last act

is far shorter than the preceding ones, yet as the fourth act must needs contain Bremono's death, and as Segasto meets Amadine and Mucedorus at the same place where the latter has killed Bremono, it seems impossible to begin the fifth act at an earlier scene. Moreover, it should be observed that it seems to speak in favour of our division, that, according to it, the fourth act, like all the preceding ones, concludes with a scene in which the clown plays a prominent part.

MUCEDORUS.

THE PROLOGUE.

Most sacred Majesty, whose great deserts
Thy subject England, nay, the world admires:
Which heaven grant still increase! O, may your praise
Multiplying with your hours, your fame still raise!
Embrace your council: love with faith them guide, 5
That both, as one, bench by each other's side.
So may your life pass on, and run so even,
That your firm zeal plant you a throne in heaven,
Where smiling angels shall your guardians be
From blemish'd traitors, stain'd with perjury. 10
And as the night's inferior to the day,
So be all earthly regions to your sway!
Be as the sun to day, the day to night,
For from your beams Europe shall borrow light.
Mirth drown your bosom, fair delight your mind, 15
And may our pastime your contentment find.

[*Exit Prologue.*]

THE PROLOGUE. First in C. — 1. The whole prologue being written in verse, also the first two lines ought to form a couplet. Coll. proposes to read either *desires* in l. 1, or *asserts* in l. 2. — 4. *Multiplying*, cp. Abbott, Shakespearian Grammar s. 468. — 6. C *both, as one, bench*; D *both at one bench*; H *as one bench, by*; M *both as one bench by*. — CD *each other's*; HM *the other's*. — 8. CDH *throne*; M *place*.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ADROSTUS, <i>king of Arragon.</i> ^{a)}	<i>The King of Valentia.</i>
SEGASTO	} <i>Noblemen of</i>
RUMBELO ^{b)}	
	} <i>Arragon.</i>
COLLEN, <i>a Councillor.</i> ^{c)}	RODERIGO
TREMELIO, <i>a Captain.</i>	} <i>Noblemen of</i>
MOUSE, <i>the Clown.</i>	
<i>Noblemen, Councillors.</i>	BORACHIUS ^{d)}
<i>A Messenger, a Boy.</i>	} <i>Valentia.</i>
	BREMO, <i>a wild Man.</i>
AMADINE, <i>the king of Arragon's daughter.</i>	
ARIENA, <i>her Maid.</i>	
<i>An old Woman.</i>	
<i>Comedy.</i>	
<i>Envy.</i>	

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ. In A the number of performers is limited to eight, among whom the parts are distributed in the following manner: *The King and Rombelo; Mucedorus, the Prince of Valencia; Amadine, the King's Daughter of Arragon; Segasto, a Nobleman; Envy, Tremelio, a Captain, BreMO, a wild man; Comedy, a Boy, an Old Woman, Ariena, Amadine's Maid; Collen, a Councillor, a Messenger; Mouse, the Clown.* — The characters of the *King of Valentia* and *Anselmo* have been added in CHM, where, accordingly, ten actors are required. — a. The name of *Adrostopus* occurs II, 1; AH *Adrostopus*; CM *Adrastus*. — b. A, p. 202 *Rombelo*, p. 244 *Rumbelo*; C *Rombolo*; H *Romelo, Rumbelo*; M, p. 2 *Romelio*, p. 42 *Rumbelo*. — c. AC *Collen*; HM *Collin*. — d. The name of *Borachius* is omitted in the *Dramatis Personæ* of the old copies; but it occurs in the stage-directions IV, 1, where CD have *Borachius*. HM *Barachius*, and V, 1, where C has *Borachius*, D *Barcheus*, H *Baracheus*, and M *Brachius*.

INDUCTION.

Enter COMEDY, joyfully, with a Garland of Bays on her head.

Why so; thus do I hope to please:
 Music revives, and mirth is tolerable;
 Comedy, play thy part and please;
 Make merry them that come to joy with thee.
 Joy then, good gentles; I hope to make you laugh. 5
 Sound forth Bellona's silver-tuned strings;
 Time fits us well, the day and place is ours.

Enter ENVY, his arms naked, besmeared with blood.

Envy. Nay, stay, you minion, stay; there lies a block!
 What, all on mirth? I'll interrupt your tale,
 And mix your music with a tragic end. 10

Com. What monstrous ugly hag is this,
 That dares control the pleasures of our will?
 Vaunt, churlish cur, besmear'd with gory blood,
 That seemst to check the blossoms of delight,
 And stifle the sound of sweet Bellona's breath; 15
 Blush, monster, blush, and post away with shame,
 That seekest disturbance of a goddess' deeds.

Envy. Post hence thyself, thou counterchecking trull;
 I will possess this habit, spite of thee,
 And gain the glory of thy wished sport. 20

INDUCTION. 1. El., thinking the Induction to have begun with a regular blank verse, proposes: *Why, even so.* — 3. Supposing *Come* to have dropped before *Comedy*, we should have a regular octosyllabic. — Coll. conjectures: *play thy part with ease.* — 6. *Bellona.* cp. El.'s Notes. — 7. *C are ours.* — 8. *A Nay, stay, minion; there; C Stay, stay; minion there; HM Nay, stay minion, stay, there; you* added by El. — 14. *A blossoms; HM blossom.* — 15. *All stifle; C stiffe; M still.* — 17. *HM name; Wag.* proposes *fame.* — 20. *HM this wished.* — *Qq port; El. sport.*

I'll thunder music shall appal the nymphs,
 And make them shiver their clattering strings,
 Flying for succour to their dankish caves.

Sound Drums within, and cry, Stab, Stab

- Hark, hearken, thou shalt hear a noise
 25 Shall fill the air with shrilling sound,
 And thunder music to the gods above:
 Mars shall himself reach down
 A peerless crown upon brave Envy's head,
 And raise his rival with a lasting fame.
 30 In this brave music Envy takes delight,
 Where I may see them wallow in their blood,
 And spurn at arms and legs quite shivered off,
 And hear the cries of many thousands slain.
 How lik'st thou this, my trull? 't is sport alone for me!
 35 *Com.* Vaunt, bloody cur, nurs'd up with tiger's sap,
 That so dost seek to quail a woman's mind!
 Comedy's mild, gentle, willing for to please,
 And seeks to gain the love of all estates,
 Delights in mirth, mix'd all with lovely tales,
 40 And bringeth things with treble joy to pass.
 Thou bloody, envious 'sdainer of men's joys,
 Whose name is fraught with bloody stratagems,
 Delights in nothing but in spoil and death,
 Where thou may'st trample in their lukewarm blood,

21. HM *appale*. — 22. Wag. *shiver in their*. — 23. Qq *Danish*; El. and Coll. *dankish*. — 24. *Hark* added by Wag. -- HM *hear noise*. — 25. AC *with a shrilling*. — 27. AC *breathe*; LM *breath*; Wag. *reach*. — 29. AHM *chival*; C *cheval*; Wag. *rival*. 'Even Mars acknowledges the merits of his rival Envy by presenting him with a crown.' Wag. — 31. Qq *them wallow*. As there is no antecedent to which *them* might refer, it would perhaps be better to read *men*; cp., however, l. 65. — 32. Qq *To spurn*. — 33. A *cry*. — A *thousand*. — 34. A *this*; CHM *'tis*. — 35. A *tigers'*. — 36. C *does*; HM *That₁ so dost quail*. — 37. Qq *Comedy is mild*. — 39. Qq *delighting*; Wag. *delights*. — 41. Qq *disdainer*; as to *'sdainer*, cp. Marlowe, King Edward II. p. 216 (ed. by Dyce, London 1870): *Why, youngling, 'sdain'st thou so of Mortimer?* See Abbott s. 460. — El. thinks *bloody* to have intruded by mistake from the following line. — 43. AHM *delights*; C *delightst*. Cp. Abbott s. 340. — 44. C *on their lukewarm*.

And grasp their hearts within thy cursed paws. 45
 Yet veil thy mind; revenge thou not on me;
 A silly woman begs it at thy hands.
 Give me the leave to utter out my play;
 Forbear this place; I humbly crave thee, hence!
 And mix not death 'mongst pleasing comedies, 50
 That treat nought else but pleasure and delight.
 If any spark of human rests in thee,
 Forbear; begone; tender the suit of me.

Envy. Why, so I will; forbearance shall be such,
 As treble death shall cross thee with despite, 55
 And make thee mourn, where most thou joy'st,
 Turning thy mirth into a deadly dole,
 Whirling thy measures with a peal of death,
 And drench thy metres in a sea of blood.
 This will I do; thus shall I bear with thee; 60
 And more, to vex thee with a deeper spite,
 I will with threats of blood begin thy play,
 Favouring thee with envy and with hate.

Com. Then, ugly monster, do thy worst,
 I will defend them in despite of thee: 65
 And though thou think'st with tragic fumes
 To brave my play unto my deep disgrace,
 I force it not, I scorn what thou canst do;
 I'll grace it so, thyself shall it confess,
 From tragic stuff to be a pleasant comedy. 70

Envy. Why then, Comedy, send now thy actors forth,
 And I will cross the first steps of their tread,
 Making them fear the very dart of death.

46. CHM *thee not*. — 48. M *Give me leave*; Wag. *give me but leave*.
 — 49. HM *thee hence*. — 51. HM *treats*. — 52. H *humane*. As to *spark*
of human cp. Shakespeare's Sonnets 68, 3: *Before these bastard signs of fair*
were born. See Abbott s. 5. — AHH *rests*; C *rest*. — 58. Qq *pleasures*;
 El. *measures*. — 59. Qq *methods*; El. *metres*. — 60. M *Thus will*. —
 61. A *And, more to*. — 62. HM *the play*. — 65. *them* has no antecedent
 to which it refers; cp. l. 31. — 66. Wag. supposes *thy* to have dropped
 before *tragic*; the verse is, however, to be considered as an octosyllabic; cp.
 ll. 24, 25, 64. — 67. A *brave*; C *prave*; HM *prove*. M *great disgrace*.
 — 68. C *I force thee not*. — 71. Qq *Why then, Comedy, send thy actors*
forth; cp. l. 77. — 72. HM *step*. — HM *trade*.

Com. And I'll defend them maugre all thy spite.

75 So, ugly fiend, farewell, till time shall serve,
That we may meet to parley for the best.

Envy. Content, Comedy, I will go spread my branch,
And scattered blossoms from mine envious tree
Shall prove two monsters, spoiling of thy joys.

[*Exeunt.*

A C T I.

SCENE I.

Sound. Enter MUCEDORUS and ANSELMO his friend..

Muce. Anselmo!

Ansel. My lord and friend.

Muce. True, my Anselmo, both thy lord and friend —

Ansel. Whose dear affections bosom with my heart,
5 And keep their domination in one orb,
Whence ne'er disloyalty shall root it forth,
But faith plant firmer in your choice respect.

Muce. Much blame were mine, if I should other deem,
Nor can coy Fortune contrary allow.

10 But, my Anselmo, loth I am to say,
I must estrange that friendship;
Misconstrue not, 't is from the realm, not thee:
Though lands part bodies, hearts keep company.
Thou know'st that I imparted often have

15 Private relations with my royal sire,
Had as concerning beauteous Amadine,
Rich Arragon's bright jewel, whose face (some say)
That blooming lilies never shone so gay,

76. C *parle.* — 77. Qq *I'll.* — 78. M *my.* — 79. Qq *their*; Del. *thy.*
— Qq *Exit.*

SCENE I. Omitted in A. — 3. CD give ll. 3—5 to Mucedorus, ll. 6—7 to Anselmo. — In HM l. 3 is omitted, ll. 2, 4, 5, 6, and 7 are given to Anselmo. — 9. C *coy Fancy.* — 10. C *am I.* — 10—11. Printed as one line in HM. — 11. H *I must estrange that friendship*; M *enlarge that friendship*; Wag. proposes *estrange my friendship*; El. completes the verse by adding *for a while.* — 12. C *misconster.* — 16. Wag.'s emendation *Such as* for *Had as* would require the change of *concerning* into *concerned.*

Excelling, not excell'd; yet lest report
 Does mangle verity, boasting of what is not, 20
 Wing'd with desire, thither I'll straight repair,
 And be my fortunes, as my thoughts are, fair!

Ansel. Will you forsake Valentia, leave the court,
 Absent you from the eye of sovereignty?
 Do not, sweet prince, adventure on that task, 25
 Since danger lurks each where; be won from it!

Muce. Desist dissuasion,
 My resolution brooks no battery.
 Therefore, if thou retain thy wonted form,
 Assist what I intend. 30

Ansel. Your miss will breed a blemish in the court,
 And throw a frosty dew upon that beard,
 Whose front Valentia stoops to.

Muce. If thou my welfare tender, then no more;
 Let love's strong magic charm thy trivial phrase, 35
 Wasted as vainly as to gripe the sun.
 Augment not then more answers; lock thy lips,
 Unless thy wisdom suit me with disguise,
 According to my purpose.

Ansel. That action craves no counsel, 40
 Since what you rightly are, will more command,
 Than best usurped shape.

Muce. Thou still art opposite in disposition;
 A more obscure servile habiliment
 Beseems this enterprise. 45

Ansel. Then like a Florentine or mountebank!

Muce. 'Tis much too tedious; I dislike thy judgment,
 My mind is grafted on an humbler stock.

Ansel. Within my closet there does hang a cassock,
 Though base the weed is, 'twas a shepherd's once, 50

19. *M less.* — 20. *C mangle virtue.* — The substitution of *truth* for *verity*, suggested by El., would restore the metre. — 36. *to gripe the sun*, cp. Spenser, *The Shepherd's Calendar*, Ecl. VII: *to strive to touch a star*; and Nares' Gl. s. *To cast beyond the moon.* — 47. *C 'Tis too much tedious.* — 48. *H a humbler.* — 49. *Qq does there.* — 50. *C The weed is covert, 't was.* — *once* added by Wag. — El. proposes: *Though base the weed is, for it was a shepherd's.*

Which I presented in Lord Julio's masque.

Muce. That, my Anselmo, and none else but that,
Mask Mucedorus from the vulgar view.
That habit suits my mind; fetch me that weed.

[*Exit* ANSELMO.

55 Better than kings have not disdain'd that state,
And much inferior, to obtain their mate.

Re-enter ANSELMO *with a Shepherd's coat, which he gives*
to MUCEDORUS.

Muce. So!

Let our respect command thy secrecy,
And let us take at once a brief farewell;
60 Delay to lovers is a second hell.

[*Exit* MUCEDORUS.

Ansel. Prosperity forerun thee; awkward chance
Never be neighbour to thy wishes' venture;
Content and Fame advance thee; ever thrive,
And glory thy mortality survive!

[*Exit* ANSELMO.

SCENE II.

Enter MOUSE *with a bottle of hay.*

Mouse. O, horrible, terrible! Was ever poor gentleman so
scar'd out of his seven senses? A bear? Nay, sure it cannot
be a bear, but some devil in a bear's doublet; for a bear
could never have had that agility to have frightened me. Well,
5 I'll see my father hanged before I'll serve his horse any more.
Well, I'll carry home my bottle of hay, and for once make
my father's horse turn Puritan, and observe fasting-days, for
he gets not a bit. But soft! this way she followed me;
therefore I'll take the other path, and because I'll be sure to

56. HM *Enter Anselmo with a shepherd's coat.* — 57—59. Thus altered
by El. Qq: *So let our respect command thy secrecy | At once a brief fare*
well. — 62. C *wish's.*

have an eye on her, I will shake hands with some foolish 10
creditor, and make every step backward.

*[As he goes backwards, the Bear comes in, and he tumbles
over her, and runs away, and leaves his bottle of hay
behind him.]*

SCENE III.

*Enter SEGASTO running, and AMADINE after him, being
pursued with a bear.*

Seg. O, fly, madam, fly, or else we are but dead!

Ama. Help, sweet Segasto, help, or else I die!

Seg. Alas, madam! there is no way but flight;

Then haste, and save your self. [*SEGASTO runs away.*]

Ama. Why, then I die; ah! help me in distress! 5

*Enter MUCEDORUS, like a Shepherd, with a sword
drawn, and a Bear's head in his hand.*

Muce. Stay, lady, stay; and be no more dismay'd.
That cruel beast, most merciless and fell,
Which hath bereaved thousands of their lives,
Affrighted many with his hard pursuits,
Prying from place to place to find his prey, 10
Prolonging thus his life by others' death,
His carcass now lies headless, void of breath.

Ama. That foul, deformed monster, is he dead?

Muce. Assure yourself thereof — behold his head;
Which, if it please you, lady, to accept, 15

10. C on her; D on him (l. 8 she followed: in the stage-direction over her); HM to her. — CDH take; M shake.

SCENE III. 1. *Madam*, used as a monosyllable; it is different in l. 3. — El. proposes either to place *O* in a separate line, or to read: *O, fly, madam, fly, else we are but dead!* — 2. Qq: *Help, Segasto, help, help, sweet Segasto, or else I die.* El. suggests: *Help, help! help, sweet Segasto, or I die;* or *Segasto, help! help, sweet Segasto, or I die.* — 4. C *haste to save.* — In AHM the stage-direction is placed after l. 2. — 8. Omitted in M. — H *That has bereaved.* — 9. Qq *pursues.*

With willing heart I yield it to your majesty.

Ama. Thanks, worthy shepherd, thanks a thousand times;
This gift, assure thyself, contents me more
Than greatest bounty of a mighty prince,
20 Although he were the monarch of the world.

Muce. Most gracious goddess, more than mortal wight —
Your heavenly hue of right imports no less —
Most glad am I, in that it was my chance
To undertake this enterprise in hand,
25 Which doth so greatly glad your princely mind.

Ama. No goddess, shepherd, but a mortal wight,
A mortal wight distressed as thou seest:
My father here is King of Arragon,
I, Amadine, his only daughter am,
30 And after him sole heir unto the crown.
And now, whereas it is my father's will,
To marry me unto Segasto, one,
Whose wealth through's father's former usury
Is known to be no less than wonderful,
35 We both of custom oftentimes did use,
Leaving the court, to walk within the fields
For recreation, specially in spring,
In that it yields great store of rare delights;
And, passing farther than our wonted walks,
40 Scarce ent'red were within these luckless woods,
But right before us down a steep-fall hill
A monstrous ugly bear did hie him fast
To meet us both — I faint to tell the rest.
Good shepherd, but suppose the ghastly looks,

16. Mucedorus, as Wag. observes, does not yet know that Amadine is a king's daughter; Wag., therefore, proposes to *your hands*; it might, perhaps, be simpler to read to *your grace*. — The tautological expression *which* (l. 15) — *it* (l. 16) would be avoided by the change of *it* to *unto*. — 25. *Our princely*. — 31. Qq: *Now whereas it is my father's will*; *And* added by Wag.; El. proposes either to pronounce *whereas* as a trisyllable, or to read *my dear father's*. — 33. CHM begin the line with *one*, which in A is the last word of l. 32. Cp. IV, 2, 26. — Qq *through father's*; El. *through's*. — 37. Qq: *especially*; Wag. *specially*. — ACHM *especially the spring*; D *especially in the spring*; El. (Del. p. XII) *in spring*. — 39. CHM *further*. — 40. HM omit *were*. — 41-43. The same lines occur II, 4, 32-35.

The hideous fears, the hundred thousand woes, 45
Which at this instant Amadine sustained.

Muce. Yet, worthy princess, let thy sorrow cease,
And let this sight your former joys revive.

Ama. Believe me, shepherd, so it doth, no less.

Muce. Long may they last unto your heart's content. 50
But tell me, lady, what's become of him,
Segasto call'd, what is become of him?

Ama. I know not, I; that know the powers divine;
But God grant this, that sweet Segasto live!

Muce. Yet was hard-hearted he, in such a case, 55
So cowardly to save himself by flight,
And leave so brave a princess to the spoil.

Ama. Well, shepherd, for thy worthy valour tried,
Endangering thyself to set me free,
Unrecompensed, sure, thou shalt not be. 60

In court thy courage shall be plainly known;
Throughout the kingdom will I spread thy name,
To thy renown and never-dying fame;
And that thy courage may be better known,
Bear thou the head of this most monstrous beast 65
In open sight to every courtier's view.

So will the king, my father, thee reward:
Come, let's away and guard me to the court.

Muce. With all my heart. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

Enter SEGASTO solus.

Seg. When heaps of harms do hover over head,
'Tis time as then, some say, to look about,
And of ensuing harms to choose the least.
But hard, yea hapless, is that wretch's chance,

45. AC *the thousand hundred.* — 49. Qq *so it doth no less.* —
51. Qq *what is.* — 53. C *That know not I.* — 55. AHM *Yet hard-hearted*
he; C *Yet hard, hard-hearted he*; *was* added by El. — 69. Omitted in A.

SCENE IV. 1. M *arms.* — 3. A *And so ensuing*; CHM *And of*
ensuing; D *And so of ensuing.*

- 5 Luckless his lot, and caitiff-like accurst,
 At whose proceedings fortune ever frowns:
 Myself, I mean, most subject unto thrall;
 For I, the more I seek to shun the worst,
 The more by proof I find myself accurs'd.
- 10 Erewhiles assaulted with an ugly bear,
 With Amadine in company all alone,
 Forthwith by flight I thought to save myself,
 Leaving my Amadine unto her shifts;
 For death it was for to resist the bear,
- 15 And death no less of Amadine's harms to hear.
 Accursed I, in ling'ring life thus long!
 In living thus, each minute of an hour
 Doth pierce my heart with darts of thousand deaths.
 If she by flight her fury do escape,
- 20 What will she think?
 Will she not say, yea, flatly to my face,
 Accusing me of mere disloyalty:
 A trusty friend is tried in time of need.
 But I, when she in danger was of death,
- 25 And needed me, and cried, Segasto, help!
 I turn'd my back, and quickly ran away,
 Unworthy I to bear this vital breath!
 But what, what needs these plaints?
 If Amadine do live, then happy I:
- 30 She will in time forgive and so forget.
 Amadine is merciful, not Juno-like,
 In harmful heart to harbour hatred long.

Enter MOUSE *the Clown, running, crying, Clubs!*

Mouse. Clubs, prongs, pitchforks, bills! O help! A bear,
 a bear, a bear!

7. *thrall*, cp. A. III, Sc. 3, 10. — 10. C *Erewhile assaulted by*. — 11. Qq *Fair Amadine*. — 15. *Amadine* is to be pronounced as a dissyllable, cp. l. 31. — 16. A *long*; HM *long*; the punctuation *long!* has been suggested by Wag. — 17. HM *thus each*. — 19. C *his fury*. — HM *doth*. 28. CHM *need*; see Abbott s. 297. — 31. Cp. Marlowe, *Elegies* III, 10 (The Works of Marlowe ed. Dyce, London 1870, p. 346): *Why am I sad, when Proserpine is found, | And, Juno-like, with Dis reigns under ground? — 31. M hearts*.

Seg. Still bears, and nothing else but bears? Tell me, sirrah, where she is.

Mouse. O sir, she is run down the woods, I saw her white head and her white belly. 5

Seg. Thou talkest of wonders to tell me of white bears; but, sirrah, didst thou ever see any such?

Mouse. No, faith, I never saw any such; but I remember my father's words, he bad me take heed I was not caught with a white bear. 10

Seg. A lamentable tale, no doubt.

Mouse. I tell you what, sir; as I was going a-field to serve my father's great horse, and carried a bottle of hay upon my head — now, do you see, sir, I, fast hoodwinked, that I could see nothing, perceiving the bear coming, I threw my hay into the hedge and ran away. 15

Seg. What, from nothing?

Mouse. I warrant you, yes, I saw something; for there was two load of thorns besides my bottle of hay, and that made three. 20

Seg. But tell me, sirrah, the bear that thou didst see, Did she not bear a bucket on her arm?

Mouse. Ha, ha, ha! I never saw a bear go a-milking in all my life. But hark you, sir, I did not look so high as her arm, I saw nothing but her white head and her white belly. 25

Seg. But tell me, sirrah, where dost thou dwell?

Mouse. Why, do you not know me?

Seg. Why, no; how should I know thee?

Mouse. Why, then you know nobody, an you know not me. I tell you, sir, I am goodman Rat's son, of the next parish over the hill. 30

Seg. Goodman Rat's son; why, what's thy name?

Mouse. Why, I am very near kin unto him.

Seg. I think so; but what's thy name? 35

3. *else om.* HM. — 5. A *I see.* — 11. HM *the white bear.* — 16. M *should.* — CHM *I perceiving.* — 20. C *loads.* — H *beside.* — 22. C *the bear thou.* — 24. A *saw bear.* — 25. C *mark you.* — 30. *Why, then you know nobody &c.* is perhaps, as Wag. thinks, an allusion to Thom. Heywood's play: If you know not me, you know nobody. — 31. AC *am the goodman.* — 33. *why* omitted in HM. — 34. C *akin to him.*

Mouse. My name? I have a very pretty name; I'll tell you what my name is, my name is Mouse.

Seg. What, plain Mouse?

Mouse. Ay, plain Mouse, without either welt or guard.
40 But do you hear, sir, I am but a very young Mouse, for my tail is scarce grown out yet; look you here else.

Seg. But I pray thee, who gave thee that name?

Mouse. Faith, sir, I know not that, but if you would fain know, ask my father's great horse, for he hath been half
45 a year longer with my father than I have.

Seg. (aside) This seems to be a merry fellow;
I care not if I take him home with me.

Mirth is a comfort to a troubled mind,

A merry man a merry master makes. [To MOUSE.

50 How say'st thou, sirrah? wilt thou dwell with me?

Mouse. Nay, soft, sir; two words to a bargain;
pray you, what occupation are you?

Seg. No occupation, I live upon my lands.

Mouse. Your lands? Away, you are no master for me.
55 Why, do you think that I am so mad to go seek my living in the lands amongst the stones, briars, and bushes, and tear my holiday-apparel? Not I, by your leave.

Seg. Why, I do not mean thou shalt.

Mouse. How then?

60 *Seg.* Why, thou shalt be my man, and wait on me at the court.

Mouse. What's that?

Seg. Where the king lies.

Mouse. What's that same king, a man or a woman?

65 *Seg.* A man as thou art.

36. *a* omitted in A. — H *petty*. — M *I will*. — 39. Cp. Robert Greene, *Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay* ed. by A. Dyce, London 1869, p. 177: *Mark you, masters, here's a plain honest man without welt or guard*. — 40. CHM *am a very*. — 41. HM *look here*. — 42. HM *pray you* and *gave you*. — 45. HM *have been*. — 52. M *pray what*. — *what occupation are you?* Cp. Julius Cæsar I, 1: *What trade are you?* — 55. C *think I am*. — M *go to seek*. — 56. M *among*. — 61. HM *at court*. — 63. Cp. Julius Cæsar III, 1: *He lies to-night within seven leagues*. — 64. HM *what is that king*.

Mouse. As I am? Hark you, sir, pray you, what kin is he to goodman King of our parish, the churchwarden?

Seg. No kin to him; he is the king of the whole land.

Mouse. King of the land? I never saw him.

Seg. If thou wilt dwell with me, thou shalt see him every day. 70

Mouse. Shall I go home again to be torn in pieces with bears? No, not I, I will go home and put on a clean shirt, and then go drown myself.

Seg. Thou shalt not need, if thou wilt dwell with me, thou shalt want nothing. 75

Mouse. Shall I not? Then here's my hand, I'll dwell with you. And hark you, sir! now you have entertained me, I will tell you what I can do. I can keep my tongue from picking and stealing, and my hands from lying and slandering, I warrant you, as well as ever you had man in all your life. 80

Seg. Now will I to court with sorrowful heart, rounded with doubts.

If Amadine do live, then happy I: 85

Yea happy I, if Amadine do live.

[*Exeunt.*

A C T II.

SCENE I.

Enter the King, with a young Prince prisoner, AMADINE, TREMELIO, with COLLEN and Councillors.

King. Now, brave lords, that our wars are brought to Our foes to foil, and we in safety rest, [end,

66. C *pray what kin.* — 69. M *of the whole land.* — A *see.* — 73. C *by bears.* — 79. M *I'll tell.* — Cp. *Midsummer-Night's Dream* IV, 1. *Bottom: The eye of man hath not heard, the ear of man hath not seen, man's hand is not able to taste, his tongue to conceive, nor his heart to report, what my dream was.* — 81. C *you had a man; M you had any man.* — 82. HM *in your life.*

SCENE I. *Prince* om. HM. — *Tremelio* om. A. — 1. *that only* in D. — 2. ACHM *Our foes the foil; D Our foes have had the foil; Wag. Our foes to foil.*

- It us behoves to use such clemency
 In peace, as valour in the wars. It is
 5 As great an honour to be bountiful
 At home, as to be conquerors in the field.
 Therefore, my lords, the more to my content,
 Your liking, and our country's safeguard,
 We are dispos'd in marriage for to give
 10 Our daughter unto Lord Segasto here,
 Who shall succeed the diadem after me,
 And reign hereafter, as tofore I've done,
 Your sole and lawful King of Arragon.
 How say you, lordings, like you of my advice?
 15 *Collen.* An't please your majesty, we do not only allow
 of your highness' pleasure, but also vow faithfully in what we
 may to further it.
King. Thanks, good my lords, if long Adrostus live
 He will at full requite your courtesies.
 20 *Tremelio,*
 In recompense of thy late valour done,
 Take unto thee the Catalonian prince,
 Our prisoner, lately taken in the wars.
 Be thou his keeper, his ransom shall be thine;
 25 We'll think of it, when leisure shall afford.
 Meanwhile, do use him well; his father is a king.
Trem. Thanks to your majesty, his usage shall be such
 As he thereat shall think no cause to grutch.
[Exeunt TREMELIO and Prince.
King. Then march we on to court, and rest our wearied limbs!
 30 But, Collen, I've a tale in secret kept for thee:

3 seqq., in HM divided in the following manner: *It us behoves to use such clemency in peace, | As valour in the wars; | 'Tis as great honour to be bountiful at home, | As conquerors in the field.* | — 5. an added by El. — 6. *to be omitted* in HM. — 8. *A your country's.* — As to the pronunciation of *safeguard*. cp. Abbott ss. 487 and 488. — 10. *A to Lord: C to the Lord.* — 12. Qq *as I tofore have done*; the verse has been restored by Wag.; see, however, the following note. — 14. As to the extra syllable added before the pause, cp. l. 24 and Abbott s. 454. — 18. CM *Adrastus.* — 20. *Tremelio* placed in a separate line by Wag. — 22. Qq *Catalone a prince*; corrected by Haz. — 23. Qq *Lately our prisoner taken in the wars.* — 28. M *have no cause.* — 30. Qq *I have.* — HM *fit for thee.*

When thou shalt hear a watchword from thy king,
 Think then some weighty matter is at hand,
 That highly shall concern our state,
 Then, Collen, look thou be not far from me,
 And for thy service thou tofore hast done, 35
 Thy truth and valour prov'd in every point,
 I shall with bounties thee enlarge therefore.
 So guard us to the court.

Collen. What so my sovereign doth command me do,
 With willing mind I gladly yield consent. 40

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.

Enter SEGASTO and the Clown, with weapons about him.

Seg. Tell me, sirrah, how do you like your weapons?

Mouse. O, very well, very well, they keep my sides
 warm.

Seg. They keep the dogs from your shins very well, do
 they not? 5

Mouse. How, keep the dogs from my shins? I would
 scorn but my shins could keep the dogs from them.

Seg. Well, sirrah, leaving idle talk, tell me, dost thou
 know Captain Tremelio's chamber?

Mouse. Ay, very well, it hath a door. 10

Seg. I think so; for so hath every chamber. But dost
 thou know the man?

Mouse. Ay forsooth, he hath a nose on his face.

Seg. Why, so hath every one.

Mouse. That's more than I know. 15

Seg. But dost thou remember the captain that was here with
 the king even now, that brought the young prince prisoner?

Mouse. O, very well.

Seg. Go unto him, and bid him come to me. Tell him
 I have a matter in secret to impart to him. 20

35. C for the service. — 39. M me to do.

SCENE II. 4. H shins well, do; M shins, do. — 7. C would keep;
 HM should keep. — 17. even now omitted in HM. — 19. C Go unto him,
 and bid him come unto me; HM Go to him, and bid him come unto me.

Mouse. I will, master; master, what's his name?

Seg. Why, Captain Tremelio, man.

Mouse. O, the meal-man; I know him very well; he brings meal every Saturday; but hark you, master, must I bid
25 him come to you, or must you come to him?

Seg. No, sirrah, he must come to me.

Mouse. Hark you, master; how, if he be not at home? What shall I do then?

Seg. Why, then leave word with some of his folks.

Mouse. O, master, if there be nobody within, I will leave
30 word with his dog.

Seg. Why, can his dog speak?

Mouse. I cannot tell; wherefore doth he keep his chamber
else?

Seg. To keep out such knaves as thou art.

Mouse. Nay, by'r Lady, then go yourself.

Seg. You will go, sir; will you not?

Mouse. Yes, marry, will I. O, 'tis come to my head, an
a be not within, I'll bring his chamber to you.

Seg. What, wilt thou pluck down the king's house?

Mouse. Nay, by'r Lady, I'll know the price of it first. Master, it is such a hard name, I have forgotten it again. I
40 pray you, tell me his name.

Seg. I tell thee, Captain Tremelio, knave.

Mouse. O! Captain Treble-knave, Captain Treble-knave.
45

[*Calling.*

Enter TREMELIO.

Trem. How now, sirrah, dost thou call me?

Mouse. You must come to my master, Captain Treble-knave.

Trem. My lord Segasto, did you send for me?

21. M *I will, master; what's his name.* — 22. El. has succeeded in making intelligible the two puns, made by the clown on the name of Tremelio, by adding *man* in the first case, and *knave* in the second; it is the same with *buzzard* III, 3, 32. — 27. *how* omitted in HM. — 30. Haz. writes *How* for *O*, the reading of the Qq. — A *within? I.* — 36. CHM *by Lady.* — 37. A *will ye not?* — 39. CHM *he be not.* — M *I will bring.* — 40. HM *will you pluck.* — 41. CHM *by Lady.* — 42. C *'tis a hard name.* — 44. *knave*, see note on l. 22. — 45. The stage-direction *Calling* only in C.

Seg. I did, Tremelio. Sirrah, about your business! 50

Mouse. Ay, marry, what's that, can you tell?

Seg. No, not well.

Mouse. Marry, then, I can; straight to the kitchen-dresser, to John the cook, and get me a good piece of beef and brewis; and then to the buttery-hatch, to Thomas the butler 55 for a jack of beer, and there for an hour I'll so belabour myself; and therefore I pray you call me not till you think I have done, I pray you, good master.

Seg. Well, sir, away. Tremelio this it is!

[*E.vit* MOUSE.

Thou know'st the valour of Segasto, spread 60

Through all the kingdom of great Arragon,
Such as hath triumph found and favours, never

Daunted at any time, but now a shepherd

Admired is in court for worthiness,

And lord Segasto's honour laid aside; 65

My will therefore is this, that thou dost find

Some means to work the shepherd's death: I know

Thy strength sufficient to perform my wish,

Thy love no other than to 'venge my injuries.

Trem. 'Tis not a shepherd's frowns Tremelio fears, 70

51. *Ay* omitted in C. — 59 seqq. AC read: *Well, sir, away. | Tremelio, this it is. Thou knowest the valour of Segasto, | Spread through all the kingdom of Arragon, | And such as hath found triumph and favours, | Never daunted at any time? But now a shepherd | Admired at in Court for worthiness, | And Segasto's honour laid aside, | My will therefore is this that thou dost find | Some means to work the shepherd's death: I know | Thy strength sufficient to perform my desire, and thy love no otherwise than to revenge my injuries.* D differs from AC by reading l. 64 *Is admired at*, and l. 65 *And Segasto's honour is laid.* HM read l. 62 *And such as have found triumph and favours*, l. 64 *Admired in court*, l. 69 *to love.* We have adopted EL's corrections for ll. 59—61 and ll. 63—68; in l. 62, where ACD differ from HM, we follow ACD, omitting, however, *And*, and writing *triumph found* for *found triumph*; thus we refer the sentence *Such as hath found* as well as the participles *spread* and *daunted* to the substantive *valour* in l. 60. In l. 69 we read with Wag. *other* instead of *otherwise*, and write *'venge*, which occurs eight times in Shakespeare, for *revenge*: Wag. proposes *wreak*. Line 69 forms an *apparent Alexandrine*, i. e. a verse whose *'last foot contains, instead of one extra syllable, two extra syllables, one of which is slurred.*' Abbott s. 494. — 70. Q1 *It is not the frowns of a shepherd that Tremelio fears*: the blank verse has been restored by Wag.

Therefore 'count it accomplish'd what I take in hand.

Seg. Thanks, good Tremelio, and assure thyself,
What I do promise, that will I perform.

Trem. Thanks, my good lord, and in good time see where
75 He cometh. Stand by awhile, and you shall see
Me put in practice your intended drifts.

[*Enter MUCEDORUS.*

Have at thee, swain, if that I hit thee right!

Muce. Vile coward, so without cause to strike a man —
Turn, coward, turn; now strike, and do thy worst!

[*MUCEDORUS kills him.*

80 *Seg.* Hold, shepherd, hold! O spare him, kill him not!

Accursed villain, tell me, what thou'st done?

Tremelio, ah, trusty Tremelio!

I sorrow for thy death, and since that thou
Living didst faithful prove unto Segasto,

85 So now Segasto living with revenge

Will honour th' dead corpse of Tremelio:

Bloodthirsty villain, born and bred to merciless murder,

Tell me, how durst thou be so bold, as once

To lay thy hands upon the least of mine?

90 Assure thee, thou'lt be used according to the law!

71. Qq *Therefore account it accomplished*: El. *Therefore 'count it accomplished*: Wag. omits *Therefore* and reads: *'Count it accomplished*. — 73. Qq *What I promise*: Wag. *What I do promise*: El. *Whate'er I promise*. — HM *I will*. — 74. HM *good my lord*. — In HM ll. 74—76 end *time, awhile, drift*. — 76. HM *drift*. — 78. H *vilde*. — 80 seqq. A *Hold, shepherd, hold: spare him, kill him not. | Accursed villain, tell me, what hast thou done? | Ah, Tremelio, trusty Tremelio!* | *I sorrow for thy death, and since that thou | Living didst prove faithful to Segasto, | So Segasto now living shall honour the dead corpse | Of Tremelio with revenge. Bloodthirsty villain, | Born and bred to merciless murder, tell me | How durst thou be so bold, as once to lay | Thy hands upon the least of mine? Assure thyself | Thou shalt be used according to the law.* | — In CHM the lines end *him not, done, death, Segasto, dead, revenge, murder, bold, mine, law*. Besides, CHM differ from A in l. 86, where they read: *Will honour*, and in l. 87, where they have *in merciless murder*. — *Tell me* in l. 88 omitted in M. For ll. 80—89 we have adopted El.'s arrangement; in l. 90 El. proposes: *Assure thyself, thou shalt be used according | To th' law*. Although it is true that *To th' law* forms a blank verse with the following line, we prefer our arrangement to the disjunction of the prepositional expression *according to*.

Mucc. Segasto, cease! these threats are needless.
Accuse me not of murder, that have done
Nothing but in mine own defence.

Seg. Nay, shepherd, reason not with me;
I'll manifest the fact unto the King, 95
Whose doom will be thy death, as thou deserv'st.
What ho, Mouse, come away!

Enter MOUSE.

Mouse. Why, how now, what's the matter? I thought
you would be calling before I had done.

Seg. Come, help, away with my friend. 100

Mouse. Why, is he drunk? cannot he stand on his
feet?

Seg. No, he is not drunk, he is slain.

Mouse. Flain! No, by'r Lady, he is not flain.

Seg. He is killed, I tell thee. 105

Mouse. What do you use to kill your friends? I will
serve you no longer.

Seg. I tell thee, the shepherd killed him.

Mouse. O, did a so? But, master, I will have all his
apparel, if I carry him away. 110

Seg. Why, so thou shalt.

Mouse. Come, then, I will help; mass, master, I think
his mother sang looby to him, he is so heavy. [*Exeunt.*]

Mucc. Behold the fickle state of man,
That's always mutable, never at one! 115
Sometimes we feed our fancies with the sweet
Of our desires, sometimes again
We feel the heat of extreme miseries.

92 seq. A *But in mine own defence accuse not me | Of murder that have done nothing.* — In HM l. 92 ends at *nothing*; El. corrects the verse by beginning l. 93 with *Nothing*. — 95. CHM *thy fact.* — 101. HM *can he not.* — 104. ACHM *by Lady*; D *by'r Lady*. — 106. C *friend.* — 109. HM *did he.* — 114 seqq. We have given the soliloquy of Mucedorus after El.'s correction; A reads: *Behold the fickle state of man, always mutable; | Never at one. | Sometimes we feed on fancies | With the sweet of our desires: sometimes again | We feel the heat of extreme miseries &c.* In HM the first three lines end: *at one, our desires, extreme miseries.* — 116. All *we feed on fancies.*

Now I'm in favour 'bout the court and country;
 120 To-morrow will those favours turn to frowns.
 To-day I live, revenged on my foe,
 To-morrow I die, my foe reveng'd on me. [Exit.]

SCENE III.

Enter BREMO, a wild man.

No passenger this morning? What, not one?
 A chance that seldom doth befall.
 What, not one? then lie thou there,
 And rest thyself till I have further need. [Lays down his club.]

5 Now, Bremo, sit, thy leisure so affords,
 A needless thing. [*Sits down*] Who knows not Bremo's strength,
 That like a king commands within these woods?
 The bear, the boar dare not abide my sight,
 But haste away to save themselves by flight.

10 The crystal waters in the bubbling brooks,
 When I come by, do swiftly slide away,
 And clap themselves in closets under banks,
 Afraid to look bold Bremo in the face.
 The aged oaks at Bremo's breath do bow,

15 And all things else are still at my command.
 Else what would I?
 Rend them in pieces, pluck them from the earth,
 And each way else I would revenge myself.
 Why, who comes here with whom I dare not fight?

20 Who fights with me and doth not die the death? Not one!

119. Qq *Now am I in favour about.*

SCENE III. 4. The stage-direction is omitted in HM. — 5. Qq *sith*: El. *sit*. — 6. Qq *an endless*; Wag. *an aimless*; El. *a needless*. — The stage-direction has been added by El. — 8. A *dares*. — H *his sight*; M *his slight*. Cp. Dryden, *The Hind and the Panther* I, 156: *The Bear, the Boar, and every savage name*. Ibid. I, 293: *The Wolf, the Bear, the Boar can there advance*. — 9. A *hastes*. — 10. M *babbling*. — 11. A *doth*. — 12. AHM *claps*. — 17. Qq *pieces, and pluck*. — 19. M *dare I*. — 20. Wag. would like to strike out *not one* as an awkward tautological repetition which, moreover, spoils the metre.

What favour shows this sturdy stick to those,
 That here within these woods are combatants with me?
 Why, death, and nothing else but present death.
 With restless rage I wander through these woods,
 No creature here, but feareth Bremo's force: 25
 Man, woman, child, and beast, and bird,
 And everything that doth approach my sight,
 Are forc'd to fall if Bremo once do frown.
 Come, cudgel, come, my partner in my spoils,
 For here I see this day it will not be; 30
 But when it falls that I encounter any,
 One pat sufficeth for to work my will.
 What, comes not one? Then, let's be gone;
 A time will serve, when we shall better speed. [Exit.

SCENE IV.

*Enter the King, SEGASTO, the Shepherd, and the Clown,
with others.*

King. Shepherd, thou hast heard thine accusers; murther
 Is laid unto thy charge; what canst thou say?
 Thou hast deserved death.

Muce. Dread sovereign, I must needs confess,
 I slew this captain in mine own defence, 5
 Not out of any malice, but by chance;
 But mine accuser hath a further meaning.

Seg. Words will not here prevail:
 I seek for justice, and justice craves his death.

King. Shepherd, thine own confession hath condemned thee. 10

21. In A printed as an alexandrine, ending *that here*. — 22. In order to restore a regular blank verse, El. proposes to read *That in these woods*. Wag. suggests either to omit *with me* or to write *woods combat with me*. — 26. and before *beast* added by El. — 32. *M sufficeth to work*. — 34. *C A time will come*.

SCENE IV. 1 seqq. A *Shepherd* | *Thou hast heard thine accusers. Murther* | *Is laid to thy charge &c.* In HM the lines end: *accusers, charge, death*. We have given ll. 1—3 after El. = 6. Qq *Not of.* = *out* added by El.; Wag. proposes: *Though not of any malice*. = 7. C *farther*. = 8 seq. El. divides after *for justice*; Wag. adopts the division of Qq, but proposes to read *I seek for justice, justice &c.*

Sirrah, take him away,
And do him straight to execution.

Mouse. So I shall, I warrant him. But do you hear,
master king, he is kin to a monkey; his neck is bigger than
15 his head.

Seg. Sirrah, away with him, and hang him 'bout the middle.

Mouse. Yes, forsooth, I warrant you. Come on, sir; ah, so
like a sheepbiter a looks.

Enter AMADINE, and a Boy with a Bear's Head.

Ama. Dread sovereign and well beloved sire,
20 On benden knees I crave the life of this
Condemned shepherd, which tofore preserved
The life of thy sometime distressed daughter.

King. Preserved the life of my sometime distressed daughter?
How can that be? I never knew the time
25 Wherein thou wast distress'd: I never knew the day
But that I have maintained thy estate,
As best beseem'd the daughter of a king;
I never saw the shepherd until now.
How comes it then, that he preserv'd thy life?

Ama. Once walking with Segasto in the woods,
Further than our accustom'd manner was,
Aright before us down a steep-fall hill,
A monstrous ugly bear did hie him fast,
To meet us both: now whether this be true,
35 I refer it to the credit of Segasto.

Seg. Most true, an't like your majesty.

King. How then?

Ama. The bear being eager to obtain his prey,
Made forward to us with an open mouth,
As if he meant to swallow us both at once;

11 seq. One line in Qq; Qq to execution straight. — 13. Qq he shall. —
16. CHM Come, sirrah. — Qq about. — 17. HM Come you, sirrah; C Come
on sirrah. — 17 seq. AC a so like; M a, so like. — Sheepbiter, cp.
Twelfth Night, II, 5: the niggardly, rascally sheep-biter (viz. Malvolio).
— 19. M sir. — 20. A on benden kneces; CHM on bended knee. — 19—22
printed as prose in HM. — 21. Qq heretofore. — 31. C farther. — 32. Qq
Right before us down; Wag. Right before us adown. — Cp. I, 3, 41 seqq.
— 35. Wag. proposes to read: I do refer it to Segasto's credit.

The sight whereof did make us both to dread, 40
 But specially your daughter Amadine,
 Who — for I saw no succour incident
 But in Segasto's valour — desperate grew,
 And he most coward-like began to flie,
 Left me distress'd to be devour'd of him — 45
 Segasto, how say you? Is it not true?

King. His silence verifies it to be true. What then?

Ama. Then I amaz'd, distressed, all alone,
 Did hie me fast to 'scape that ugly bear.
 But all in vain; for why, he reached after me, 50
 And oft I hardly did escape his paws,
 Till at the length this shepherd came and brought
 To me his head. Come hither, boy; lo, here it is,
 Which I present unto your majesty.

[*The bear's head presented to the king.*]

King. The slaughter of this bear deserves great fame. 55

Seg. The slaughter of a man deserves great blame.

King. Indeed, occasion oftentimes so falls out.

Seg. Tremelio in the wars, O King, preserved thee.

Ama. The shepherd in the woods, O King, preserved me.

Seg. Tremelio fought, when many men did yield. 60

Ama. So would the shepherd, had he been in field.

Mouse. So would my master, had he not run away.

[*Aside.*]

Seg. Tremelio's force sav'd thousands from the foe.

Ama. The shepherd's force hath saved thousands mo.

Mouse. Ay, shipsticks, nothing else. [*Aside.* 65

King. Segasto, cease the shepherd to accuse,
 His worthiness deserves a recompense,
 All we are bound to do the shepherd good.

43. Qq *I grew desperate.* — 46. Qq *How say you, Segasto.* — El. gives the words *How say you to the King.* — 51. Qq *And hardly I did oft;* corrected by Haz. — 52. M *at length*; ll. 52—54 in A form four lines, ending: *shepherd came, his head, it is, majesty*; in HM three lines ending *shepherd came, his head, majesty.* — 54. HM *I do present.* — 57. Qq *oftentimes*; Wag. *often*; El. *ofttimes.* — 58. M *preserved me.* — 62. [*Aside*] omitted in HM. — 64. C *thousands, me*; HM *hath many thousands moe.* — 65. ACH *shipsticks*; M *sheepsticks.* — 66. Qq *Segasto, cease to accuse the shepherd*; corrected by Wag.

Shepherd,

- 70 Whereas it was my sentence thou shouldst die,
So shall my sentence stand, for thou shalt die.

Seg. Thanks to your majesty.

King. [*To Seg.*] But soft, Segasto, not for this offence.

[*To Muce.*] Long may'st thou live; [*to Seg.*] and when the Sisters

- 75 To cut in twain the twisted thread of life, [shall decree.

Then let him die: for this I set him free;

[*To Muce.*] And for thy valour I will honour thee.

Ama. Thanks to your majesty.

King. Come, daughter, let us now depart to honour

- 80 The worthy valour of the shepherd with rewards. [*Exeunt.*

Mouse. O master, hear you, you have made a fresh hand now, I thought you would, beshrew you! Why, what will you do now? You have lost me a good occupation by this means.

Faith, master, now I cannot hang the shepherd, I pray you,

- 85 let me take the pains to hang you, it is but half an hour's exercise.

Seg. You are still in your knavery, but sith

I cannot have his life, I will procure

His banishment for ever. Come on, sirrah.

- 90 *Mouse.* Yes, forsooth, I come. [*Aside*] Laugh at him, I pray you. [*Exeunt.*

A C T III.

SCENE I.

Enter MUCEDORUS solus.

Muce. From Amadine, and from her father's court,
With gold and silver, and with rich rewards,

69. *Shepherd* placed in a separate line by Wag. — 74 seqq. As for the change of persons, see El. — 78. AC give the words *Thanks to your majesty* to Muce., H to Seg., M to Ama. — 79. A *Come, daughter, let us now depart* | *To honour the worthy valour of the shepherd* | *With our rewards.* — In HM these lines are printed as prose. — Qq *with our rewards.* — 82. A *you would be slow you*; C *you would bestow you*; H *I thought you would beshrew you*; M *I thought you would, beshrew you.* — *Why* omitted in CHM. — 83. C *by the means.* — 85. M *take pains.* — 87 seqq. In A the lines end *life, ever, sirrah*; in HM *knavery, life, sirrah.* —

SCENE I. 1—5 seem to be hopelessly corrupt.

Flowing from the banks of golden treasures.
 More may I boast, and say, but I,
 Was never shepherd in such dignity. 5

Enter the Messenger and MOUSE, the Clown.

Mes. All hail, worthy shepherd!

Mouse. All rain, lousy shepherd!

Muce. Welcome, my friends, from whence come you?

Mes. The King and Amadine do greet thee well,
 And after greeting done, bid thee depart the court. 10
 Shepherd, begone!

Mouse. Shepherd, take law-legs; fly away, shepherd.

Muce. Whose words are these? come these from Amadine?

Mes. Ay, from Amadine.

Mouse. Ay, from Amadine. 15

Muce. Ah! luckless fortune, worse than Phaeton's tale,
 My former bliss is now become my bale.

Mouse. What, wilt thou poison thyself?

Muce. My former heaven is now become my hell.

Mouse. The worst alehouse that I ever came in in all 20
 my life.

Muce. What shall I do?

Mouse. Even go hang thyself half an hour.

Muce. Can Amadine so churlishly command,
 To banish th' shepherd from her father's court? 25

Mes. What should shepherds do in the court?

Mouse. What should shepherds do among us? Have
 not we lords enough o'er us in the court?

Muce. Why, shepherds are men, and kings are no more.

Mes. Shepherds are men, and masters o'er their flock. 30

Mouse. That's a lie; who pays them their wages, then?

Mes. Well, you are always interrupting of me, but

3. C *golden treasures*; HM *gold and treasures*. — 9. Qq *Amadine greet*. — 10. AC *greetings*. — AH *bids*. — 9–11. El. supposes these lines to have originally formed a couplet: *The King and Amadine greet thee well, and greeting done, | Bid thee depart the court: — shepherd, begone!* — 13. CHM *come*. — 15. CHM *Amadine*. — 20. HM *ever I*. — 23. HM omit *half an hour*. — 25. Qq *the shepherd*. — 27. C *amongst*. — 28. A *Have we not*. — Qq *on us*; Haz. *o'er us*. — 30. Qq *over their*. — M *flocks*.

you are best look to him, lest you hang for him, when he is gone. [Exit.]

35 *Mouse (sings).* And you shall hang for company,
For leaving me alone.

Shepherd, stand forth, and hear my sentence! Shepherd, begone within three days, on pain of my displeasure; shepherd, begone; shepherd, begone, begone, begone, begone; shepherd,
40 shepherd, shepherd. [Exit.]

Muce. And must I go? and must I needs depart?
Ye goodly groves, partakers of my songs,
In time tofore, when fortune did not frown,
Pour forth your plaints, and wail a while with me.
45 And thou bright sun, my comfort in the cold,
Hide, hide thy face, and leave me comfortless;
Ye wholesome herbs, and ye sweet-smelling savours,
Yea, each thing else prolonging life of man,
Change, change your wonted course that I,
50 Wanting your aid, in woful sort may die.

SCENE II.

Enter AMADINE and ARIENA, her maid.

Ama. Ariena,
If any body ask for me, make some excuse,
Till I return.

Ari. What, an Segasto call?

Ama. Do thou the like to him, I mean not to stay long.
[Exit ARIENA.]

33. HM *you were best to look.* — C *lest you hang.* — 34. Qq *The Clown sings.* | *Mouse.* *And you shall hang for company.* — 37. CH *hear my sentence*; A *hear thy sentence*; M *bear my sentence.* — 38. AHM *in pain*; C *on pain.* — 39. C prints the following lines as verse: *Shepherd begone, shepherd begone* | *Begone, begone, begone,* | *Begone, shepherd, begone, begone,* | *Shepherd, shepherd, shepherd.* | Cp. *Love's Labour's Lost* IV, 1: *Rosa.* *Thou canst not hit it, hit it, hit it,* | *Thou canst not hit it, my good man.* | *Bo.* *An I cannot, cannot, cannot,* | *An I cannot, another can.* | — 43. HM *before.* — 45. HM *The comfort of my cold.* — 47. Qq *and sweet*; Wag. *and ye sweet.* — 49. In HM this line ends at *course.*

SCENE II. 1—3 in the Qq end *for me, return, call.* We have given the lines after El.'s arrangement. — 4. HM *Do you.*

- Muce.* This voice so sweet my pining spirits revives. 5
Ama. Shepherd, well met, pray, tell me how thou dost?
Muce. I linger life, yet wish for speedy death.
Ama. Shepherd!
 Although thy banishment already be decreed,
 And all against my will, yet Amadine — 10
Muce. Ah, Amadine, to hear of banishment is death,
 Ay, double death to me, but since I must depart,
 One thing I crave —
Ama. Say on, with all my heart.
Muce. That in my absence, either far or near,
 You honour me as servant to your name. 15
Ama. Not so.
Muce. And why?
Ama. I honour thee as sovereign of my heart.
Muce. A shepherd and a sovereign nothing like.
Ama. Yet like enough, where there is no dislike. 20
Muce. Yet great dislike, or else no banishment.
Ama. Shepherd, it only is
 Segasto that procures thy banishment.
Muce. Unworthy wights are most in jealousy.
Ama. Would God, they would free thee from banishment, 25
 Or likewise banish me.
Muce. Amen, I say, to have your company.
Ama. Well, shepherd, sith thou sufferest this for my sake,
 With thee in exile also let me live,
 On this condition, shepherd, thou canst love. 30
Muce. No longer love, no longer let me live.

6. *pray* added by El. — 8–12. In A these lines end *banishment, my will, Amadine, hear, to me; I crave*; in H *already, Amadine, death, I crave*; in M they are printed as prose. — We have adopted the arrangement given by El. — 9. M *be already*. — 13. El. proposes either to read *with all thy heart*, or to give the words *with all my heart* to Mucedorus. — 15. A *with your name*. — 22–23. In HM printed in one line; in A printed in two lines, the second of which begins with *Procures*. — HM *it is only*. — 24. CHM *more in jealousy*; El. conjectures *worst in jealousy*. — 25–26. In A these lines end at *they would, and banish me*. — 27. A *say I*. — 28. A *Well, shepherd, sith thou sufferest, This for my sake*; HM *Well, shepherd, sith thou sufferest thus for my sake*. — 30. M *shepherd that thou*.

Ama. Of late I loved one indeed, now love
I none but only thee.

Muce. Thanks, worthy princess,
I burn likewise, yet smother up the blast,
35 I dare not promise what I mayn't perform.

Ama. Well, shepherd, hark what I shall say,
I will return unto my father's court,
For to provide me of such necessaries
As for my journey I shall think most fit.
40 This being done, I will return to thee;
Do thou therefore appoint the place, where we may meet.

Muce. Down in the valley, where I slew the bear,
And there doth grow a fair broad-branched beech,
That overshades a well: so who comes first,
45 Let him abide the happy meeting of us both.
How like you this?

Ama. I like it very well.

Muce. Now, if you please, you may appoint the time.

Ama. Full three hours hence, God willing, I'll return.

Muce. The thanks that Paris gave the Grecian queen,
50 The like doth Mucedorus yield.

Ama. Then, Mucedorus, for three hours farewell. [*Exit.*]

Muce. Your 'parture, lady, breeds a privy pain. [*Exit.*]

SCENE III.

Enter SEGASTO solus.

Seg. 'Tis well, Segasto, that thou hast thy will:
Should such a shepherd, such a simple swain,
Eclipse thy credit famous through the court?

32. HM *indeed, but now I love none.* — 33—34. In HM these lines end *only thee, likewise, blast.* El. proposes to read: *Of late I loved one indeed, but now, | I love no one but only thee.* — 35. Qq *may*: Wag. *mayn't.* — 38. A *Therefore to*; CDHM *There for to*; Haz. *There to.* — 40. In A this line ends at *do thou.* — 41. Two lines in HM: *Do thou therefore appoint the place, | Where me may meet.* | — 45. Qq *them*: Wag. *him.* — In A the line ends *meeting of.* — 46. HM *I like it well.* — 48. AHM *I will*; C *I'll.* — 52. Qq *departure.*

SCENE III. 3. Qq *As he eclipse.* — *famous* omitted in M.

No, ply, Segasto, ply!
 And let it not be said in Arragon, 5
 A shepherd hath Segasto's honour won.

Enter MOUSE, the Clown, calling his master.

Mouse. What ho! master, will you come away?

Seg. Will you come hither, I pray you, what is the matter?

Mouse. Why, is it not past eleven o'clock? 10

Seg. How then, sir?

Mouse. I pray you, come away to dinner.

Seg. I pray you, come hither.

Mouse. Here's such a-do with you, will you never come? 15

Seg. I pray you, sir, what news of the message I sent you about?

Mouse. I tell you, all the messes be on the table already. There wants not so much as a mess of mustard half an hour ago. 20

Seg. Come, sir, your mind is all upon your belly, You have forgotten what I bid you do.

Mouse. Faith, I know nothing, but you bad me go to breakfast.

Seg. Was that all? 25

Mouse. Faith, I have forgotten it, the very scent of the meat hath made me forget it quite.

Seg. You have forgotten the errand I bid you do?

Mouse. What arrant? an arrant knave, or an arrant whore? 30

Seg. Why, thou knave, did I not bid thee banish the shepherd, buzzard?

Mouse. Oh, the shepherd's bastard.

5. Qq *Let it not in Arragon be said.* — For ll. 1—6 we have adopted the arrangement given by El.; in A the lines end: *will, swain, through, Segasto ply, said, won*; in HM the last words of the lines are: *will, as he, court, said, won.* — 10. C *it is not past.* — HM *of the clock.* — 22. A *I did bid you do.* — 26. C *have forgotten, the very scent.* — 27. AD *hath forget*; C *hath made me*; Haz. *meat made me forget.* — 28. C *bid you to do.* — 32. *buzzard* added by El. Cp. note on II, 2, 22.

Seg. I tell thee, the shepherd's banishment.

35 *Mouse.* I tell you, the shepherd's bastard shall be well kept; I'll look to it myself. But I pray you, come away to dinner.

Seg. Then you will not tell me whether you have banished him, or no?

40 *Mouse.* Why, I cannot say *banishment*, an you would give me a thousand pounds to say so.

Seg. Why, you whoreson slave, have you forgotten that I sent you and another to drive away the shepherd?

Mouse. What an ass are you; here's a stir indeed, here's
45 message, errand, banishment, and I cannot tell what.

Seg. I pray you, sir, shall I know whether you have drove him away?

Mouse. Faith, I think I have; an you will not believe me,
ask my staff.

50 *Seg.* Why, can thy staff tell?

Mouse. Why, he was with me too.

Seg. Then happy I, that have obtain'd my will.

Mouse. And happier I, if you would go to dinner.

Seg. Come, sirrah, follow me.

55 *Mouse.* I warrant you, I will not lose an inch of you, now you are going to dinner. [*Aside*] I promise you, I thought it seven year, before I could get him away.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.

Enter AMADINE sola.

Ama. God grant my long delay procures no harm,
Nor this my tarrying frustrate my pretence.
My Mucedorus surely stays for me,
And thinks me over-long. At length I come,
5 My present promise to perform.

35. M *I tell thee.* — 40. HM *if you would.* — 45. C *errand*; AHM *arrant.* — 56. AC *dinner, I promise you. I thought seven year*; HM *dinner: I promise you I thought seven years.* — *it first in D.* — 57. *Aside* omitted in CHM.

SCENE IV. 2. *pretence* = intention, cp. III, 5, 3.

Ah, what a thing is firm, unfeigned love!
 What is it which true love dares not attempt?
 My father, he may make, but I must match;
 Segasto loves, but Amadine must like,
 Where likes her best: compulsion is a thrall: 10
 No, no, the hearty choice is all in all,
 The shepherd's virtue Amadine esteems.
 But what, methinks my shepherd is not come;
 I muse at that, the hour is sure at hand.
 Well, here I'll rest, till Mucedorus come. 15

[*She sits down.*]

Enter BREMO, looking about; hastily taketh hold of her.

Bremo. A happy prey! now, Bremo, feed on flesh:
 Dainties, Bremo, dainties, thy hungry paunch to fill;
 Now glut thy greedy guts with lukewarm blood.
 Come, fight with me, I long to see thee dead.

Ama. How can she fight, that weapons cannot wield? 20

Bremo. What, canst not fight? Then lie thou down

Ama. What, must I die? [and die.

Bremo. What needs these words? I thirst to suck thy

Ama. Yet pity me, and let me live a while! [blood.

Bremo. No pity, I will feed upon thy flesh, 25
 And tear thy body piecemeal joint from joint.

Ama. Ah, how I want my shepherd's company!

Bremo. I'll crush thy bones betwixt two oaken trees.

Ama. Haste, shepherd, haste, or else thou com'st too late.

Bremo. I'll suck the sweetness from thy marrow-bones. 30

Ama. Ah spare, ah spare to shed my guiltless blood!

Bremo. With this my bat will I beat out thy brains;
 Down, down, I say, prostrate thyself upon the ground.

Ama. Then, Mucedorus, farewell, my hoped joys, farewell!

7. M *that true love.* — 10. *thrall*, cp. I, 4, 7. — 13. HM *the shepherd.*
 — 14. CHM omit *sure*; El. proposes *near*. — 15. (Stage-direction.) D *hastily*
he taketh; H *looking about hastily takes hold on her*; M *looking about*
hastily, takes hold on her. — 21. C *lay thee down*; HM *lie thee*. — 23. C
What need. — 25. Qq *No pity I. I'll.* — 26. A *I'll tear.* — HM *joint by*
joint. — 27. HM *Ah, now.* — 28. HM *between.* — 32. HM *I will.* —
 ll. 32—33 printed as three lines in A, ending respectively *out, say, ground.*
 — 34. Assuming a different accent in *farewell*, we have a regular Alexandrine.

- 35 Yea, farewell life, and welcome present death! *[She kneels.*
 To thee, O God, I yield my dying ghost.
Bremo. Now, Bremo, play thy part.
 How now, what sudden change is this?
 My limbs do tremble, and my sinews shake,
 40 My weak'ned arms have lost their former force.
 Ah, Bremo, Bremo, what a foil hast thou,
 That yet at no time ever wast afraid
 To dare the greatest gods to fight with thee, *[He strikes.*
 And now wants strength for one down-driving blow?
- 45 Ah, how my courage fails, when I should strike!
 Some new-come spirit abiding in my breast,
 Saith, *Spare her, Bremo, spare her, do not kill.*
 Shall I spare her, which never spared any?
 To it, Bremo, to it; essay again.
- 50 I cannot wield my weapon in my hand,
 Methinks I should not strike so fair a one,
 I think her beauty has bewitch'd my force,
 Or else within me alter'd nature's course.
 Ay, woman, wilt thou live i' th' woods with me?
- 55 *Ama.* Fain would I live, yet loth to live in woods.
Bremo. Thou shalt not choose, it shall be as I say,
 And therefore follow me! *[Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

Enter MUCEDORUS solus.

Muce. It was my will an hour ago and more,
 As was my promise for to make return;
 But other business hind'ring my pretence:

38. Qq *chance*; corrected by El. — 40. Qq *unweakened*; El. and Coll. *weak'ned*. — 41. HM *hadst*. — 42. CHM omit *ever*; El. would prefer: *That yet at no time wast afraid before*. — 44. A *want*; CHM *wants*; Wag. *wantst*. Cp. Abbott s. 340. — 48. Qq transpose the two commencing words of this line, and the first word of the preceding one in the following manner: *Saith spare her, which never spared any, | Shall I spare her, Bremo? Spare her, do not kill.* | — HM *that never*. — 49. Qq *say*; Haz. *essay*. — 50. AH *weapons*. — 54. ACH *in woods*.

It is a world to see, when man appoints,
 And purposely one certain thing decrees, 5
 How many things may hinder his intent.
 What one would wish, the same is farthest off.
 But yet th' appointed time cannot be past,
 Nor hath her presence yet prevented me.
 Well, here I will stay, and expect her coming. 10

[They cry within, Hold him, stay him, hold!

Some one or other is pursued, no doubt,
 Perhaps some search for me; 'tis good
 To doubt the worst, therefore I will be gone. *[Exit.*

SCENE VI.

*Cry within, Hold him, hold him! Enter MOUSE, the Clown,
 with a pot.*

Mouse. Hold him, hold him, hold him! here's a stir indeed; here came hue after the crier, and I was set close at mother Nip's house, and there I called for three pots of ale, as 'tis the manner of us courtiers. Now, sirrah, I had taken the maidenhead of two of them — now as I was lifting up 5 the third to my mouth, there came, Hold him, hold him! Now I could not tell whom to catch hold on, but I am sure I caught one, perchance a may be in this pot. Well, I'll see. Mass, I cannot see him yet; well, I'll look a little further. Mass, he is a little slave, if a be here; why, here's nobody. 10 All this goes well yet; but if the old trot should come for her pot? — ay, marry, there's the matter, but I care not, I'll face her out, and call her old rusty, dusty, musty, fusty,

4. *It is a world to see.* Cp. *Taming of the Shrew* II, 1: *'Tis a world to see | How tame, when men and women are alone, | A meacock wretch can make the curstest shrew.* — 9. *AC prevented we.* — *prevented*, cp. *Julius Caesar* V, 1: *So to prevent the time of life.* — 10. *AIM I'll; C I will.* — *A the coming.* — (Stage-direction) *CHM They cry within, Hold him, hold him!* — 13. *CHM I'll.* — In *HIM* l. 13 begins at *Therefore.*

SCENE VI. 1. *M Hold him, hold him.* — 3. Mother Nip (or Nips?) brings to mind *John Naps of Greece* in the Induction to *The Taming of the Shrew.* — 5. *HIM and as I was.* — 10. *M if he be there.* — 11. *HIM All this is well yet.*

crusty firebrand, and worse than all that, and so face her out
15 of her pot. But soft! here she comes.

Enter the Old Woman.

O. Woman. Come on, you knave; where's my pot, you knave?

Mouse. Go, look for your pot; come not to me for your pot, 'twere good for you.

20 *O. Woman.* Thou liest, thou knave, thou hast my pot.

Mouse. You lie, an you say it. I — your pot? I know what I'll say.

O. Woman. Why, what wilt thou say?

Mouse. But say I have him, an thou dar'st.

25 *O. Woman.* Why, thou knave, thou hast not only my pot, but my drink unpaid for.

Mouse. You lie like an old — I will not say whore.

O. Woman. Dost thou call me whore? I'll cap thee for my pot.

30 *Mouse.* Cap me, an thou dar'st; search me, whether I have it or no.

[She searcheth him, and he drinketh over her head, and casts down the pot; she stumbleth at it, then they fall together by the ears; she takes her pot and goes out.]

Enter SEGASTO.

Seg. How now, sirrah, what's the matter?

Mouse. Oh, flies, master, flies.

Seg. Flies? where are they?

35 *Mouse.* Oh, here, master, all about your face.

Seg. Why, thou liest; I think thou art mad.

Mouse. Why, master, I have kill'd a dungcartful at the least.

40 *Seg.* Go to, sirrah; leaving this idle talk, give ear to me.

16. CHM *Come, you knave.* — 18. Qq *look your pot.* — *for* added by Wag. — 23. *Why* omitted in H. — 24. HM *I have it.* — 28. *cap*, see Nares s. *Cap.* — (Stage-direction.) CHM *casteth down.* — C *and they fall*; HM *and then they fall.* — C *takes up the pot.* — HM *and runs out.* — 39. M *Go, go, sirrah.* — C *leaving thy*; HM *leave this.* — C *ear unto me.*

Mouse. How, give you one of my ears? not, an you were ten masters.

Seg. Why, sir, I bad you give ear to my words.

Mouse. I tell you, I will not be made a curtal for no man's pleasure. 45

Seg. I tell thee, attend to what I say. Go thy ways straight, and rear the whole town.

Mouse. How, rear the town? Even go yourself; it is more than I can do. Why, do you think I can rear a town that can scarce rear a pot of ale to my head? I should rear a 50 town, should I not?

Seg. Go to the constable, and make a privy search; for the shepherd is run away with the King's daughter.

Mouse. How? is the shepherd run away with the King's daughter, or is the King's daughter run away with the shepherd? 55

Seg. I cannot tell, but they are both gone together.

Mouse. What a fool she is to run away with the shepherd! Why, I think I am a little handsomer man than the shepherd, myself; but tell me, master, must I make a privy search, or 60 search in the privy?

Seg. Why, dost thou think they will be there?

Mouse. I cannot tell.

Seg. Well, then search everywhere; leave no place unsearched for them. *[Ex'it.]*

Mouse. Oh, now am I in office, now will I to that old 65 firebrand's house, and will not leave one place unsearched. Nay, I'll to her ale-stand, and drink as long as I can stand; and when I have done, I'll let out all the rest, to see if he be not hid in the barrel; an I find him not there, I'll to the cupboard; I'll not leave one corner of her house unsearched. 70 I' faith, ye old crust, I will be with you now. *[E'xit.]*

43. HM *I pray you give.* — 44. *Curtal*, see Nares s. v. — 46. ADHM *attend what*; C *attend to what.* — 48. HM *rear the whole town?* — C *even you go yourself.* — 49. C *I could do.* — M *think that I can.* — 50. M *I should go rear a town.* — 57. CHM *is she.* — H *so to run.* — 59. C *or search the privy.* — 65. CHM *now I am.* — C *in an office.* — C *now I will.* — 66. C *and I will not leave.* — 67. CHM *to the ale-stand.* — HM *so long.* — 68. M *if he not hid* (if it be not a mis-print in Del.'s edition). — 69. C *an if I find*; HM *and if I find.* — *I'll to the cupboard* omitted in M. — 71. C *Faith, old crust.* — M *I'll.*

A C T IV.

SCENE I.

Sound Music. Enter the King of Valentia, ANSELMO, RODERIGO, LORD BORACHIUS, with others.

King. Enough of music, it but adds to torment,
Delights to vexed spirits are as dates
Set to a sickly man, which rather cloy than comfort;
Let me entreat you, to repeat no more.

5 *Rode.* Let your strings sleep, have done there.

[*Music ceases.*

King. Mirth to a soul disturb'd is embers turn'd
Which sudden gleam with molestation,
But sooner lose their light for it.
'Tis gold bestow'd upon a rioter,
10 Which not relieves but murders him; a drug
Given to the healthful, which infects, not cures.
How can a father that has lost his son,
A prince both virtuous, wise, and valiant,
Take pleasure in the idle acts of time?
15 No, no; till Mucedorus I shall see again,
All joy is comfortless, all pleasure pain.

Ansel. Your son, my lord, is well.

King. I prythee, speak that twice.

Ansel. The prince, your son, is safe.

20 *King.* Oh, where, Anselmo? surfeit me with that!

Ansel. In Arragon, my liege;

And at his 'parture bound my secrecy

SCENE I. *Sound Music* omitted in D. — 3. H to the sick man; M to a sick man. A regular blank verse might be restored, if we were to read: *Set to sick men &c.* — 4. DHM to entreat no more; C to retreat no more; Coll. happily conj. repeat. — 5. D Let you strings. — (Stage-direction.) D Let the music cease. — 6. Qq are embers; Haz. is embers. — 8. DHM sight; C light, as had independently been conj. by El. — HM for't. — 10—11. Printed as three lines in Qq, which besides read: 'tis a drug; by omitting 'tis, El. has construed two regular blank verses. — 13. Qq A prince both wise, virtuous and valiant; transposed by El. — 18. DHM thrice; C twice. — 22. HM parting.

By his affection's loss, not to disclose it.
 But care of him, and pity of your age,
 Makes my tongue blab what my breast vow'd --- concealment. 25

King. Thou not deceivest me.

I ever thought thee what I find thee now,
 An upright, loyal man.

But what desire or young-fed humour, nurs'd
 Within his brain, drew him so privately 30
 To Arragon?

Ansel. A forcing adamant:

Love, mix'd with fear and doubtful jealousy,
 Whether report gilded a worthless trunk,
 Or Amadine deserved her high extolment.

King. See, our provision be in readiness, 35
 Collect us followers of the comeliest hue

For our chief guardians; we will thither wend.

The crystal eye of heaven shall not thrice wink,
 Nor the green flood six times his shoulders turn,
 Till we salute the Arragonian king. 40

Music, speak loudly now, the season's apt,
 For former dolours are in pleasures wrapt.

[*Music.* *Exeunt omnes.*

SCENE II.

Enter MUCEDORUS, to disguise himself.

Mucc. Now, Mucedorus, whither wilt thou go?

Home to thy father, to thy native soil,

Or try some long abode within these woods?

Well, I will hence depart, and hie me home.

What, hie me home, said I? that may not be; 5

In Amadine rests my felicity.

Then, Mucedorus, as thou didst decree,

21—23. D ends these lines: *parture, love, disclose it*; we have adopted El.'s arrangement. -- 23. CDM *affection's love*; H *affectionous love*; El. *affection's loss*. -- 26—28. Two lines in D, ending *thought thee, loyal man*. — 30. CD *the brain*. — 38. D *eyes*. — 41. D *loudly; now*. — 42. CD *pleasure*.

SCENE II. 7. Qq *Then, Mucedorus, do as thou*.

- Attire thee hermit-like within these groves;
 Walk often to the beech, and view the well;
 10 Make settles there, and seat thyself thereon,
 And when thou feel'st thyself to be athirst,
 Then drink a hearty draught to Amadine.
 No doubt, she thinks on thee,
 And will one day come pledge thee at this well.
- 15 Come, habit, thou art fit for me. *[He disguiseth himself.*
 No shepherd now, an hermit I must be.
 Methinks this fits me very well;
 Now must I learn to bear a walking staff,
 And exercise some gravity withal.

Enter the Clown.

- 20 *Mouse.* Here's through the woods, and through the woods,
 to look out a shepherd and a stray king's-daughter. But
 soft! Who have we here? what art thou?
- Muce.* I am an hermit.
- Mouse.* An emmet, I never saw such a big emmet in all
 25 my life before.
- Muce.* I tell you sir, I am an hermit: one
 That leads a solitary life within these woods.
- Mouse.* Oh, I know thee now, thou art he that eats up
 all the hips and haws; we could not have one piece of fat
 30 bacon for thee all this year.
- Muce.* Thou dost mistake me, but I pray thee, tell me,
 What dost thou seek for in these woods?
- Mouse.* What do I seek for? a stray king's-daughter
 run away with a shepherd.
- 35 *Muce.* A stray king's-daughter run away with a shepherd?
 Wherefore? canst thou tell?

14. *come* omitted in M. — 16. AC *a hermit*. — CHM *must I*. — 20. *To look out a shepherd*; cp. *Whosoever has such treatment when he is a man, will look out other company, with whom he can be at ease*. Locke (quoted by Latham, Dict.) — 21. A *and stray*. — 26—27. Qq end these lines *hermit, woods*; as to our arrangement cp. I, 3, 32. — 28. AD *art her*. — 31—32. printed as prose in Qq. — 31. C *pray tell*. — 32. Qq *seek in these woods*. — *for* added by El. — C *Who dost thou seek*; HM *whom dost thou seek*. — 33. Qq *Do I seek? for a stray*. — C *Who do I seek*.

Mouse. Yes, that I can; 'tis this. My master and Amadine walking one day abroad, nearer to these woods than they were used, about what I cannot tell; but toward them comes running a great bear. Now, my master, he played the man and ran away, and Amadine crying after him: now, sir, comes me a shepherd, and he strikes off the bear's head. Now, whether the bear were dead before or no, I cannot tell; for bring twenty bears before me, and bind their hands and feet, and I'll kill them all. Now, ever since, Amadine hath been in love with the shepherd, and for goodwill, she's even run away with the shepherd.

Muce. What manner of man was he? canst thou describe him unto me?

Mouse. Scribe him? ay, I warrant you, that I can; a was a little, low, broad, tall, narrow, big, well-favoured fellow, a jerkin of white cloth, and buttons of the same cloth.

Muce. Thou describest him well; but if I chance to see any such, pray you, where shall I find you, or what's your name?

Mouse. My name is called Master Mouse.

Muce. O Master Mouse, I pray you what office might you bear in the court?

Mouse. Marry, sir, I am a rusher of the stable.

Muce. Oh, usher of the table.

Mouse. Nay, I say rusher, and I'll prove my office good; for look, sir, when any comes from under the sea or so, and a dog chance to blow his nose backward, then with a whip I give him the good time of the day, and strow rushes presently. Therefore I am a rusher, a high office, I promise ye.

Muce. But where shall I find you in the court?

Mouse. Why, where it is best being, either in the kitchen eating, or in the buttery drinking. But if you come, I will

37. HM *nearer these woods.* — 38. HM *towards.* — 39. HM *master played.* — 46. M *she is.* — 48. A *man was a.* — 49. HM *canst describe; C canst thou describe.* — 54. C *pray, where shall.* — 57. C *Mister Mouse.* — 59. M *I am rusher.* — 61. HM *mine office.* — 62. HM *look you, sir.* — El.'s conjecture *seat* for *sea*, although very plausible, does not seem sufficient to clear up the sense of the passage. — 63. A *straw; M strew.* — 68. A *a eating.*

provide for thee a piece of beef and brewis knuckle-deep in
70 fat; pray you, take pains, remember Master Mouse. [Exit.

Mucc. Ay, sir, I warrant I will not forget you.

Ah, Amadine! what should become of thee?

Whither shouldst thou go so long unknown?

With watch and ward each passage is beset,

75 So that she cannot long escape unknown.

Doubtless she's lost herself within these woods,

And wand'ring to and fro she seeks the well,

Which yet she cannot find; therefore I'll seek her out.

[Exit.

SCENE III.

Enter BREMO and AMADINE.

Bremo. Amadine, how like you Bremo and his woods?

Ama. As like the woods of Bremo's cruelty.

Though I were dumb, and could not answer him,

The beasts themselves would with relenting tears

5 Bewail thy savage and unhuman deeds.

Bremo. My love, why dost thou murmur to thyself?

Speak louder, for thy Bremo hears thee not.

Ama. My Bremo? no, the shepherd is my love.

Bremo. Have I not saved thee from sudden death,

10 Giving thee leave to live, that thou mightst love,

And dost thou whet me on to cruelty?

Come, kiss me, sweet, for all my favours past.

Ama. I may not, Bremo, therefore pardon me.

Bremo. See, how she flies away from me! I'll follow

15 And give attent to her. Deny my love! [Aside.

Ah, worm of beauty, I will chastise thee!

70. C *Mister*. — 72. HM *of her*. — 74. *With watch and ward*. cp. Spenser, F. Q., B. I, 3, 9. — 75. omitted in A. — 76. Qq *she hath*. — 78. ACH *will I seek*; M *I will seek*.

SCENE III. 5. A *unhuman*; C *inhuman*; HM *inhumane*; see Abbott s. 442. — 8. CHM *my Bremo, no*. — 10. HM *given*. — 13. A *Bremo and therefore*. — 14—18. Qq end these lines *from me, to her, beauty, come, block*; we have adopted El.'s arrangement. — 14. AC she flings away. — Qq *I will*. — 15. A *a rend*; CDHM *attend*. — 16. CHM *a worm*.

Come, come, prepare thy head upon the block.

Ama. Oh, spare me, Bremono, love should limit life,
Not to be made a murderer of himself.
If thou wilt glut thy loving heart with blood, 20
Encounter with the lion and the bear,
And like a wolf, prey not upon a lamb.

Bremono. Why, then, dost thou repine at me?
If thou wilt love me, thou shalt be my queen,
I'll crown thee with a chaplet made of ivy, 25
And make the rose and lily wait on thee.
I'll rend the burly branches from the oak,
To shadow thee from burning sun.
The trees shall spread themselves where thou dost go,
And as they spread, I'll trace along with thee. 30

Ama. You may, for who but you? [*Aside.*]

Bremono. Thou shalt be fed with quails and partridges,
With blackbirds, thrushes, larks and nightingales.
Thy drink shall be goats' milk and crystal water,
Distill'd from th' fountains and the clearest springs, 35
And all the dainties that the woods afford
I'll freely give thee to obtain thy love.

Ama. You may, for who but you? [*Aside.*]

Bremono. The day I'll spend to recreate my love
With all the pleasures that I can devise, 40
And in the night I'll be thy bed-fellow
And lovingly embrace thee in mine arms.

Ama. One may, so may not you. [*Aside.*]

Bremono. The satyrs and the wood-nymphs shall attend
On thee and lull thee 'sleep with music's sound, 45
And in the morning, when thou dost awake,
The lark shall sing good morrow to my queen,
And whilst he sings, I'll kiss my Amadine.

25. AC *I will.* — AC *complet.* — Qq *ivory*; Del. *ivy.* — 27. C *of the oak*; D *oxe* for *oak.* — 28. C *burning of the sun.* — 31. *Aside* only in A; it is the same in ll. 37, 43, 49, 56. — 33. Qq *larks, thrushes*; the transposition has been suggested to us by Professor Elze. — 35. A *distill'd from the fountains*; HM *distilling from the fountains.* — 40. AC *pleasure.* — 41. H *I'll by.* — 45. Qq *asleep*; cp. *Midsummer Night's Dream* IV, 1: *Half 'sleep, half waking, but as yet I swear.* — HM *music.* — 48. HM *while.* — HM *mine Amadine.*

Ama. You may, for who but you? [*Aside.*

- 50 *Bremo.* When thou art up, the wood-lanes shall be strew'd
 With violets, cowslips, and sweet marigolds,
 For thee to trample and to tread upon;
 And I will teach thee how to kill the deer,
 To chase the hart, and how to rouse the roe,
 55 If thou wilt live to love and honour me.

Ama. You may, for who but you? [*Aside.*

. *Enter MUCEDORUS.*

Bremo. Welcome, sir!

- An hour ago I look'd for such a guest.
 Be merry, wench, we'll have a frolic feast,
 60 Here's flesh enough for to suffice us both,
 Say, sirrah, wilt thou fight, or dost thou yield to die?

Muce. I want a weapon, why, how can I fight?

Bremo. Thou want'st a weapon, then thou yield'st to die.

Muce. I say not so, I do not yield to die.

- 65 *Bremo.* Thou shalt not choose, I long to see thee dead.

Ama. Yet spare him, Bremo, spare him.

Bremo. Away, I say, I will not spare him.

Muce. Yet give me leave to speak.

Bremo. Thou shalt not speak.

Ama. Yet give him leave to speak for my sake.

- 70 *Bremo.* Speak on, but be not over-long.

Muce. In time of yore, when men like brutish beasts

Did lead their lives in loathsome cells and woods,

And wholly gave themselves to witless will,

A rude, unruly rout, then man to man

- 75 Became a present prey, then might prevailed,

50. A *strawed*; CM *strewed*; H *strowed*. — 51. M *mucigolds*. — 52. A *to trace upon*. — 57—58. printed as one line in Qq. — 61. CHM *mean to die*. — 62—63. Qq read: *Muce. I want a weapon, how can I fight?* | *Bremo. Thou want'st a weapon, why, then thou yield'st to die.* | Wag. proposes to transfer *then* from l. 63 to l. 62. The correction of the text, as given above, is owing to Professor Elze. — 67. omitted in C. — 69. According to a suggestion of Professor Elze a regular blank verse would be restored by the addition of *Bremo* at the end of the line.

The weakest went to wall.
 Right was unknown, for wrong was all in all.
 As men thus lived in their great outrage,
 Behold, one Orpheus came, as poets tell,
 And them from rudeness unto reason brought, 80
 Who led by reason, soon forsook the woods:
 Instead of caves, they built them castles strong;
 Cities and towns were founded by them then.
 Glad were they, that they found such ease,
 And in the end they grew to perfect amity. 85
 Weighing their former wickedness,
 They term'd the time wherein they lived then
 A golden age, a goodly golden age.
 Now, Bremo, for so do I hear thee called,
 If men which lived tofore, as thou dost now, 90
 Wild in the woods, addicted all to spoil,
 Returned were by worthy Orpheus' means,
 Let me, like Orpheus, cause thee to return
 From murder, bloodshed, and like cruelty.
 What, should we fight before we have a cause? 95
 No, let us live, and love together faithfully.
 I'll fight for thee —
Bremo. Or fight for me, or die: or fight or else thou diest!
Ama. Hold, Bremo, hold!
Bremo. Away, I say, thou troublest me. 100
Ama. You promised me to make me your queen.

76. HM *walls*. Cp. *Romeo and Juliet* I, 1: *I will take the wall of any man or maid of Montagues*; cp. also the title of the old comedy: *The Weakest goeth to the Wall*. — 78. A *in his great*; Haz. conj. *in this great*. — 81. A *some forsook*. — 84. ACHM *were they they found*; D *were they that they found*. — 86. El. suggests *Laying* for *Weighing*, spelled *Waying* in H; we might also think of *Waring*. Cp. however Whetstone, *Promos and Cassandra* (Dedication) in *Shakespeare's Library*, ed. Hazlitt VI, 204: *And that (which is worst) their ground is not so unperfect, as their working indiscreete: not waying, so the people laugh*. — 88. HM *good*. — 89. HM *heard*; El. *do I hear*. — 91. A *Wily in wood*; CDH *wild in wood*; M *wild in woods*; El. *wild in the woods*; Haz. *wildly in wood*. — 94. M *and such like cruelties*. — 96. CHM *let's*. — 98. Qq *Fight for me*. — 101. AC *You promised me to make me your queen*; H *You promised me to make me queen*; M *You promised to make me queen*.

Bremo. I did, I mean no less.

Ama. You promised that I should have my will.

Bremo. I did, I mean no less.

105 *Ama.* Then save this hermit's life, for he may save us both.

Bremo. At thy request I'll spare him,
But never any after him. Say, hermit,
What canst thou do?

Muce. I'll wait on thee, sometime upon thy queen.

110 [*Aside.*] Such service shalt thou shortly have, as Bremo never had.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.

Enter SEGASTO, the Clown, and RUMBELO.

Seg. Come, sirs; what, shall I never have you find out
Amadine and the shepherd?

Mouse. I have been through the woods and through the
woods, and could see nothing but an emmet.

5 *Rumb.* Why, I see a thousand emmets.

Mouse. Thou meanest a little one; nay, that emmet that
I saw was bigger than thou art.

Rumb. Bigger than I? (*To Segasto*) What a fool have you
to your man! I pray you, master, turn him away.

10 *Seg.* But dost thou hear, was he not a man?

Mouse. I think he was, for he said he did lead a salt-
seller's life about the woods.

Seg. Thou wouldst say, a solitary life about the woods?

Mouse. I think it was so, indeed.

15 *Rumb.* I thought what a fool thou art.

Mouse. Thou art a wise man! [*To Segasto*] Why, he did
nothing but sleep since he went.

105. HM *the hermit's.* — 106. HM *I'll save him.* — 110. *Aside*
omitted in Qq.

SCENE IV. (Stage-direction): C *Rombolo.* — 3. A *And I have been.* —
5 seq. Qq *Rumb. Why, I see a thousand emmets; thou meanest a little*
one? | *Mouse. Nay, that emmet &c.* We have followed in our arrangement
a suggestion of Mr. F. Fritsche. — 11. *I omitted in C.* — 12. M *life round*
about. — 13. HM *wood.* — 14. H *I think so it was, indeed;* M *I think it*
was indeed. — 16. The stage-direction is omitted in Qq.

Seg. But tell me, Mouse, how did he go?

Mouse. In a white gown, and a white hat on his head,
and a staff in his hand. 20

Seg. I thought so; it was a hermit that walked a solitary
life in the woods. Well, get you to dinner; and after never
leave seeking, till you bring some news of them, or I'll hang
you both. *[Exit.*

Mouse. How now, Rumbelo, what shall we do now? 25

Rumb. Faith, I'll home to dinner, and afterward to sleep.

Mouse. Why, then thou wilt be hanged.

Rumb. Faith, I care not, for I know I shall never find
them. Well, I'll once more abroad, and if I cannot-find them,
I'll never come home again. 30

Mouse. I tell thee what, Rumbelo; thou shalt go in at
one end of the wood, and I at the other, and we will meet
both together in the midst.

Rumb. Content, let's away to dinner. *[Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

Enter MUCEDORUS solus.

Muce. Unknown to any here within these woods,
With bloody Brema do I lead my life.
The monster! he doth murder all he meets;
He spareth none, and none doth him escape.
Who would continue — who, but only I — 5
In such a cruel cut-throat's company?
Yet Amadine is there, how can I choose?
Ah, silly soul! how oftentimes she sits
And sighs, and calls, *Come, shepherd, come,*
Sweet Mucedorus, come and set me free, 10

21. H *he was a hermit*; M *he was an hermit*. — Wag, justly takes offence at the strange expression: *to walk a solitary life*; perhaps we should read: *that walked solitary-like in the woods*, similar combinations repeatedly occurring in our play; cp. *cattiff-like* I, 4, 5; *Juno-like* I, 4, 31; *coward-like* II, 4, 44; *hermit-like* IV, 2, 8. — 26. AH *afterward*; CM *afterwards*. — 32. M *both meet*.

SCENE V. 3. AHM *the monster he*; C *the monster, he*. — 6. M *such cruel*. — 8. C *a silly soul*. — M *oftentime*. — 10. HM *come set me*.

When Mucedorus present stands her by!
But here she comes.

Enter AMADINE.

What news, fair lady, as you walk these woods?

Ama. Ah, hermit! none but bad and such thou know'st.

15 *Muce.* How do you like your Bremono and his woods?

Ama. Oh, not my Bremono, nor my Bremono's woods.

Muce. And why not yours? methinks he loves you well.

Ama. I like him not, his love to me is nothing worth.

Muce. Lady, in this, methinks, you offer wrong,
20 To hate the man that ever loves you best.

Ama. Hermit, I take no pleasure in his love,
Neither doth Bremono love me best.

Muce. Pardon my boldness, lady, sith we both
May safely talk now out of Bremono's sight,

25 Unfold to me, if so you please, the full discourse,
How, when, and why you came into these woods,
And fell into this bloody butcher's hands.

Ama. Hermit, I will;

Of late a worthy shepherd I did love —

30 *Muce.* A shepherd, lady? Sure, a man unfit
To match with you!

Ama. Ay, hermit, this is true,
And when we had —

Muce. Stay there, the wild man comes;
Defer the rest until another time.

Enter BREMONO.

Bremono. What secret tale is this? what whispering have we here?
35 Villain, I charge thee tell thy tale again.

Muce. If needs I must, lo! here it is again:

11. CHM *Mucedorus (peasant)*. — 13. C *walk in these woods*. — 14. Qq *and such as thou knowest*; Mr. F. Fritsche proposes to omit *and*. — 16. Qq *Not my Bremono, nor his Bremono woods*; Haz. *Not my Bremono, | Nor Bremono's woods*. We have given the line after the correction of EL. — 18. CHM *not him*. — 21. Qq *Ah hermit*; Haz. *Hermit*. — 22. ACM *like me best*; H *love me best*. — 23. Qq *fair lady*; Haz. *lady*. — 25. C *so if you please*. — 31. Qq *Hermit, this is true*; Haz. in one line: *Hermit, 'tis true and when we had*. — 33. Qq *Refer*; Wag. *Defer*.

Whenas we both had lost the sight of thee,
 It griev'd us both, but specially thy queen,
 Who in thy absence ever fears the worst,
 Lest some mischance befall your royal grace. 40

Shall my sweet Bremo wander through the woods,
 Toil to and fro for to redress my wants,
 Hazard his life and all to cherish me?

I like not this, quoth she.

And thereupon she crav'd to know of me, 45
 If I could teach her handle weapons well.

My answer was, I had small skill therein,
 But glad, most mighty king, to learn of thee.

And this was all.

Bremo. Was 't so? None can dislike of this. I'll teach 50
 You both to fight; but first, my queen, begin:

Here, take this weapon; see how thou canst use it.

Ama. This is too big, I cannot wield it in my arm.

Bremo. Is't so? We'll have a knotty crabtree-staff
 For thee. [*To Muce.*] But, sirrah, tell me, what say'st thou? 55

Muce. With all my heart I willing am to learn.

Bremo. Then take my staff, and see how thou canst wield it.

Muce. First teach me how to hold it in my hand.

[*Taking the staff.*]

Bremo. Thou holdst it well.

[*To Amadine*] Look how he doth, thou mayst the sooner learn. 60

Muce. Next tell me how and when 'tis best to strike.

Bremo. [*Aside*] 'Tis best to strike when time doth serve,
 'Tis best to lose no time.

Muce. Then now or never is my time to strike.

Bremo. And when thou strikest, be sure to hit the head. 65

Muce. The head?

Bremo. The very head?

Muce. Then have at thine.

[*He strikes him down dead.*]

38. A *the queen.* — 41. HM *wood.* — 42. CHM *want.* — 45. *she.*
 omitted in ACHM, taken from D. — 48. CHM *gladsome, mighty king.* —
 50. HM *mistake.* — 53. HM *mine arm.* — 55. *thou* om. HM. — 58. M *in*
mine hand. — The stage-direction has been taken from C. — 60. The stage-
 direction is omitted in CHM. — 61. *me* om. HM. — 64. AC *never is my*
time; HM *never it is time.* — 66. C *He strikes Bremo dead.*

So! lie thou there and die;
 A death, no doubt, according to desert,
 Or else a worse, as thou deservest a worse.

70 *Ama.* It glads my heart, this tyrant's death to see.

Muce. Now, lady, it remains in you
 To end the tale you lately had begun,
 Being interrupted by this wicked wight —
 You said you loved a shepherd?

75 *Ama.* Ay, so I do, and none but only him;
 And will do still, as long as life shall last.

Muce. But tell me, lady, sith I set you free,
 What course of life do you intend to take?

Ama. I will disguised wander through the world,
 80 Till I have found him out.

Muce. How, if you find your shepherd in these woods?

Ama. Ah, none so happy then as Amadine.

Muce. In tract of time a man may alter much:
 Say, lady, do you know your shepherd well?

[He discloseth himself.]

85 *Ama.* My Mucedorus, hath he set me free?

Muce. He hath set thee free.

Ama. And lived so long unknown to Amadine?

Muce. Ay, that's a question whereof you mayn't be resolved.
 You know that I am banish'd from the court,

90 I know likewise each passage is beset,
 So that we cannot long escape unknown,

Therefore my will is this, that we return,
 Right through the thickets, to the wild man's cave,
 And there a while live on's provision,

95 Until the search and narrow watch be past:

This is my counsel, and I think it best.

Ama. I think the very same.

Muce. Come, let's be gone.

67. Qq *So, lie there and die.* Wag. proposes to read in one line: *Then, have at thine. So lie there and die.* — 69. HM *deservest worse.* — 76. M *doth last.* — 81. M *you should find.* — 84. ACD *He disguiseth himself;* HM *He discloseth himself;* Haz. *He discovers himself.* — 88. Qq *may not.* — 94. Qq *on his provision;* El. *we live on his provision.* We owe the reading given above to a private suggestion of Professor Elze. — 96. HM *I like it best.* — 97. C *The Clown enters and falls over the wild man.*

Enter the CLOWN, who searches, and falls over the wild Man, and so carries him away.

Mouse. Nay, soft, sir, are you here? a bots on you! I was like to be hanged for not finding you; we would borrow a certain stray king's-daughter of you; a wench, a wench, sir, 100 we would have.

Muce. A wench of me? I'll make thee eat my sword.

Mouse. O Lord, nay, an you are so lusty, I'll call a cooling card for you: ho, master, master, come away quickly!

Enter SEGASTO.

Seg. What's the matter? 105

Mouse. Look, master, Amadine and the shepherd! O brave!

Seg. What, minion, have I found you out?

Mouse. Nay, that's a lie, I found her out myself.

Seg. Thou gadding huswife,

What cause hadst thou to gad abroad, 110

Whenas thou knowest our wedding-day so nigh?

Ama. Not so, Segasto; no such thing in hand.

Show your assurance, then I'll answer you.

Seg. Thy father's promise my assurance is.

Ama. But what he promised, he bath not perform'd. 115

Seg. It rests in thee for to perform the same.

Ama. Not I.

Seg. And why?

Ama. So is my will, and therefore even so.

Mouse. Master, with a nonny, nonny, no! 120

Seg. Ah, wicked villain! art thou here?

Muce. What needs these words? we weigh them not.

99. HM *not finding of you.* 104. *cooling card.* Cp. Nares and Dyce s. v., where the expression is said to have been taken from primero and to have originally signified a decisive card that cools the courage of the adversary; we prefer, however, the explanation given by Delius t. K. Henry VI., V, 3 (note 22): *card* (from CARDUS BENEDICTUS, *Much Ado III.* 4), a plant used to cool the heat of the fever, hence anything calming and assuaging. C O master, come; HM O master, master, come. — 106. master om. HM. 109. C *housewife.* — 111. C *when that.* — 116. *for* om. A. 119. HM *even no.* — 120. AC *none none no;* HM *none none so;* Haz. *nonny, nonny, no;* cp. *Much Ado II.* 3; *Lear III.* 4; *Hamlet IV.* 5.

Seg. We weigh them not! proud shepherd, I scorn thy company.

Mouse. We'll not have a corner of thy company.

125 *Muce.* I scorn not thee, nor yet the least of thine.

Mouse. That's a lie, a would have killed me with his pugsnando.

Seg. This stoutness, Amadine, contents me not.

Ama. Then seek another, that may you better please.

130 *Muce.* Well, Amadine, it only rests in thee

Without delay to make thy choice of three:

There stands Segasto, here a shepherd stands,

There stands the third: now make thy choice.

Mouse. A lord at the least I am.

135 *Ama.* My choice is made, for I will none but thee.

Seg. A worthy mate, no doubt, for such a wife.

Muce. And, Amadine, why wilt thou none but me?

I cannot keep thee as thy father did;

I have no lands for to maintain thy state,

140 Moreover if thou mean to be my wife,

Commonly this must be thy use:

To bed at midnight, up at four;

Drudge all the day, and trudge from place to place,

Whereby our daily victuals for to win;

145 And last of all, which is the worst of all,

No princess then, but a plain shepherd's wife.

Mouse. Then God gi' you good morrow, goody shepherd!

[*Aside.*]

Ama. It shall not need; if Amadine do live,

Thou shalt be crowned king of Arragon.

150 *Mouse.* O master, laugh; when he's king, then I'll be a queen.

Muce. Then know that which never tofore was known,

I am no shepherd, no Arragonian I,

123. CM *need*. — 127. AHM *pugs-nando*; C *pugs-nardo*; probably a corruption of *poinado* or *poynado* = a *poniard*; cp. *Strikes his poinado at a button's breadth*. Return from Parnassus I, 2 (quoted by Nares). — 132. HM *Segasto, a second here*. — 137. M *wilt none*. — 143. Qq *all day*. — 144. HM *victual*. — 146. C *but plain a*. — 147. *Aside* om. CHM. — 150. HM *when he's a king*. — 152. A *never*; CHM *ne'er*; the verse would become smoother by the transposition of *never*: *That which tofore was never known*.

But born of royal blood:
 My father's of Valentia king, my mother queen;
 Who for thy sacred sake took this hard task in hand. 155

Ama. Ah, how I joy my fortune is so good!

Seg. Well, now I see Segasto shall not speed.

But, Mucedorus, I as much do joy
 To see thee here within our court of Arragon,
 As if a kingdom had befallen me this time. 160
 I with my heart surrender her to thee,

[He giveth her to him.]

And lose what right to Amadine I have.

Mouse. What, a barn's door, and born where my father
 was constable? a bots on thee, how dost thou? *[Aside.]*

Muce. Thanks, good Segasto; but you levell'd at the crown. 165

Mouse. Master, bear this, and bear all.

Seg. Why so, sir?

Mouse. He says you take a goose by the crown.

Seg. Away, go to, sir; post you to the king,
 Whose heart is fraught with careful doubts, 170
 Gladden him up, and tell him these good news,
 And we will follow, as fast as we may.

Mouse. I go, master; I run, master. *[Exeunt severally.]*

A C T V.

SCENE I.

Enter the KING OF ARRAGON and COLLEN.

King. Break, heart, and end my pallid woes!
 My Amadine, the comfort of my life,
 How can I joy, except she were in sight?
 Her absence breedeth sorrow to my soul

155. A *secret sake*. — 160. El. feels inclined to omit *this time* which indeed is an absurd addition. — 162. Qq *look*; Haz. *loose*; Del. supposes a line to have been lost after *to thee*. — 163. ACHM *what barn's door*; D *what, a barn's door*. — 164. A *dost thee*. — 165. AHM *Thanks, Segasto*. — Good only in C. — A *but yet you*. — 167. M *sirrah*. — 168. A *he sees*. — 169. ACH *Go to, sir, away*; M *Go to, sirrah, away*. — C *post to the king*. — 171. Qq *Glad him up*; Wag. *gladden him up*. — 173. CHM *Exeunt*.

SCENE I. 1. AC *paled*; D *pallade*; HM *pallid*. — 2. M *in my sight*. — 4. CM *breeds great sorrow*.

5 And with a thunder breaks my heart in twain.

Collen. Forbear those passions, gentle king,
And you shall see, 'twill turn unto the best,
And bring your soul to quiet and to joy.

King. Such joy as death, I do assure me that,
10 And nought but death, unless of her I hear,
And that with speed; I cannot sigh thus long —
But what a tumult do I hear within?

[*They cry within, Joy and happiness.*]

Collen. I hear a noise of overpassing joy
Within the court. My lord, be of good comfort,
15 And here comes one in haste.

Enter the CLOWN running.

Mouse. A king, a king, a king!

Collen. Why, how now, sirrah? what's the matter?

Mouse. Oh, 'tis news for a king, 'tis worth money.

Collen. Why, sirrah, thou shalt have silver and gold, if it be

20 *Mouse.* Oh, 'tis good, 'tis good. Amadine — [good.

King. Oh, what of her? tell me, and I will make thee a knight.

Mouse. How, a sprite? no, by'r Lady, I will not be a sprite,
masters. Get ye away, if I be a sprite, I shall be so lean, I
shall make you all afraid.

25 *Collen.* Thou sot, the King means to make thee a gentleman.

Mouse. Why, I shall want 'parel.

King. Thou shalt want for nothing.

Mouse. Then stand away, trick up thyself, here they come.

5. Coll., thinking this line to be obviously corrupt, proposes to read: *And when asunder breaks &c.* If, in so bombastic a play, we are justified in taking offence at this phrase, it would, as Professor Elze suggests to us, be preferable to write: *And will asunder break my heart in twain.* — 10. HM *except of her.* — 12. M *tunult do hear I.* — C *They cry, Joy and happiness.* — M *They cry within, Joy and gladness.* — 16. M *A King, a King!* — 23. Qq *by Lady.* — HM *a spright. Master.* — 25. HM *Then sot.* — H *make thee gentleman (make the gentleman, which Del. gives as the reading of H, is a mistake made by the copyist of Professor Elze's transcript); M make the a gentleman.* — 26. A *'pparel; C apparel; HM parrel.* — 28. A *trick up; CDHM strike up.*

Enter SEGASTO, MUCEDORUS, *and* AMADINE.

Ama. My gracious father, pardon thy disloyal daughter.

King. What, do mine eyes behold my daughter Amadine? 30

Rise up, dear daughter, and let these embracing arms

Show thee some token of thy father's joy,

Which, e'er since thy departure, hath languished in sorrow.

Ama. Dear father,

Ne'er were your sorrows greater than my griefs, 35

Ne'er you so desolate, as I was comfortless:

Yet, ne'ertheless, acknowledging myself

To be the cause of both, on bended knees, [*Kneeling.*

I humbly crave your pardon.

King. I'll pardon thee, dear daughter; 40

But as for him —

Ama. Ah, father! what of him?

King. As sure as I am king, and wear the crown,

I will revenge on that accursed wretch.

Muce. Yet, worthy prince, work not thy will in wrath,

Show favour — 45

King. Ay, such favour thou deserv'st.

Muce. I do deserve the daughter of a king.

King. Oh, impudent! a shepherd and so insolent!

Muce. No shepherd am I, but a worthy prince.

King. In fair conceit, not princely born.

Muce. Yes, princely born, my father is a king, 50

My mother queen, and of Valentia both.

[*Throwing off his disguise.*

King. What, Mucedorus? welcome to our court!

What cause hadst thou to come to me disguis'd?

31. HM *Rise up, daughter.* — AC *these my embracing.* — 32. Qq *Show some.* — 33. Qq *ever.* — This verse might be improved, if read either: *Which, since thy 'parture e'er has languish'd in sorrow,* or: *Which e'er since thy departure's languish'd in sorrow.* — 35, 36, 37. Qq *ne'er* and *nevertheless.* — 36. Qq *as I comfortless.* — 37. HM *knowing myself.* — 38. C *knee.* — The stage-direction *Kneeling* taken from C. — 41. HM *Ay father.* — 43. HM *I'll be revenged*; ep. Induction 46, note. — 46. Qq *favour as thou.* — 48. AHM *No shepherd I, but a worthy prince*; C *No shepherd I, but am a worthy prince*; D *No shepherd am I, but a worthy prince.* — 51. HM *a queen.* — The stage-direction taken from C.

Mucc. No cause to fear, I caused no offence, but this —
 55 Desiring thy daughter's virtues for to see,
 Disguis'd myself from out my father's court,
 Unknown to any, in secret I did rest,
 And passed many troubles near to death;
 So hath your daughter my partaker been,
 60 As you shall know hereafter more at large,
 Desiring you, you will give her to me,
 E'en as mine own, and sovereign of my life,
 Then shall I think my travels are well spent.

King. With all my heart, but this —
 65 Segasto claims my promise made tofore,
 That he should have her as his only wife,
 Before my council, when we came from war.
 Segasto, may I crave thee, let it pass,
 And give Amadine as wife to Mucedorus.

Seg. With all my heart, were 't a far greater thing;
 70 And what I may to furnish up their rites
 With pleasing sports and pastimes, you shall see.

King. Thanks, good Segasto; I will think of this.

Mucc. Thanks, good my lord; and while I live,
 75 Account of me in what I can or may.

Ama. And, good Segasto, these great courtesies
 Shan't be forgot.

Mouse. Why, hark you, master! bones, what have you
 done? What, given away the wench you made me take such
 80 pains for? you are wise indeed; mass, an I had known of
 that, I would have had her myself. Faith, master, now we
 may go to breakfast with a woodcock-pie.

Seg. Go, sir, you were best leave this knavery.

King. Come on, my lords, let's now to court,
 85 Where we may finish up the joyfullest day

55. Qq begin this line with *But this*. — 62. Qq *Even*. — 63. HM *travels all well spent*. — 66. *her* om. C. — 67. HM *he came*. — 70. Qq *were it*. — 71. Qq *up their rites*, | *With pleasing sports and pastimes you shall see*. — 72. C *pleasant*. — 74. HM *whilst*. — 76. *And*, omitted in HM. — 77. Qq *shall not*. — 83. M *Go to, sirrah*. — HM *to leave*.

That ever happ'd to a distressed king¹⁾;
 Were but thy father, the Valentia lord,
 Present in view of this combining knot.

A shout within; enter a MESSENGER.

What shout was that?

Mes. My lord, the great Valentia king, 90
 Newly arrived, entreats your presence.

Muce. My father?

King. Prepare a welcome; give him entertainment;
 A happier planet never reign'd than that
 Which governs at this hour. 95

Sound. Enter the KING OF VALENTIA, ANSELMO,
 RODERIGO, BORACHIUS, with others; the KING runs and
 embraces his son.

King Va. Rise honour of my age, food to my rest:
 Condemn not, mighty king of Arragon,
 My rude behaviour, so compell'd by nature,
 That manners stood unacknowledged.

King Arra. What we have to recite would tedious prove 100

87. *M Valentian.* — 88. *HM combined.* — 90. *great om. M.* — 93. *CD Prepared welcomes; give; HM Prepared welcomes give; we have given the line after El.'s correction.* — 99. *CD manner; HM manners.* — *D unacknowledged.* Mr. O. Werner proposes: *stood so unacknowledged.*

¹⁾ *From this line, we print the text as first given in C; in A the conclusion of the play runs thus:*

With mirth and joy and great solemnity
 We'll finish up these Hymen's rites most pleasantly.

Mouse. Ho lords! at the first I am one too; but hear, Master King, by your leave, a cast. Now you have done with them, I pray you, begin with me.

King. Why, what wouldst thou have?

Mouse. Oh, you forgot now! a little apparel to make's handsome. What, should lords go so beggarly as I do?

King. What I did promise thee, I will perform.

Attend on me: come, let's depart.

[They all speak.] We'll wait on you with all our hearts [heart?].

Mouse. And with a piece of my liver too. *[Exeunt omnes.]*

Collier states by mistake that in the Ed. of 1598 the drama ends with l. 86.

By declaration; therefore in and feast.
 To-morrow the performance shall explain
 What words conceal: till then, drums speak, bells ring,
 Give plausive welcomes to our brother king.

[*Sound drums and trumpets. Exeunt omnes.*

Enter COMEDY and ENVY.

Com. How now, Envy? what, blushest thou already?
 Peep forth, hide not thy head with shame,
 But with a courage praise a woman's deeds.
 Thy threats were vain, thou couldst do me no hurt,
 5 Although thou seem'dst to cross me with despite,
 I overwhelm'd and turned upside down thy block
 And made thyself to stumble at the same.

Envy. Though stumbled, yet not overthrown,
 Thou canst not draw my heart to mildness,
 10 Yet must I needs confess, thou hast done well,
 And play'd thy part with mirth and pleasant glee.
 Say all this, yet canst thou not conquer me,
 Although this time thou'st got — yet not the conquest neither,
 A double revenge another time I'll have²⁾.

101. *Therefore in and feast.* Cp. The Merry Wives of Windsor (1602) in Shakespeare's Library ed. Hazlitt VI, 200: *All parties pleased, now let us in to feast.* — 104. *C pleasant welcomes.*

5. *ACH seemst; M seem'dst.* — 6. *Qq turn'd upside down; Wag. proposes: turn'd down.* — *CHM blocks.* — 9. *HM head.* — 13. *Qq thou hast.* — Divided into two lines in *Qq.*

²⁾ *In A the conclusion, from this line, is as follows:*

Com. Then, caitiff cursed, stoop upon thy knee;
 Yield to a woman, though not unto me*),
 And pray we both together with our hearts,
 That she thrice Nestor's years may with us rest,
 And from her foes high God defend her still,
 That they 'gainst her may never work their will.

Envy. Envy, were he never so stout,
 Would beck and bow unto her majesty.
 Indeed, Comedy, thou'st overrun me now **)
 And forc'd me stoop unto a woman's sway.

*) *A not to me.*

**) *A thou hast overrun me now.*

- Com.* Envy, spit thy gall; 15
 Plot, work, contrive, create new fallacies,
 Teem from thy womb each minute a black traitor,
 Whose blood and thoughts have twin conception;
 Study to act deeds yet unchronicled,
 Cast native monsters in the moulds of men; 20
 Case vicious devils under sainted rochets;
 Unhasp the wicked where all perjuries roost,
 And swarm this ball with treasons, do thy worst,
 Thou canst not, hell-hound, cross my star to-night,
 Nor blind that glory, where I wish delight. 25
- Envy.* I can, I will.
- Com.* Nefarious hag, begin;
 And let us tug, till one the mastery win.
- Envy.* Comedy, thou art a shallow goose,
 I'll overthrow thee in thine own intent,
 And make thy fall my comic merriment. 30
- Com.* Thy policy wants gravity, thou art
 Too weak. Speak, fiend, as how?
- Envy.* Why thus.
 From my foul study will I hoist a wretch,
 A lean and hungry meager cannibal,
 Whose jaws swell to his eyes with chawing malice; 35
 And him I'll make a poet.
- Com.* What is that to the purpose?

18. C *twin's*; D *twin*; HM *twins*. — 21. Qq *sancted*; Wag. *sainted*.
 — HM *robes*. — 22. C *Unclasp*; H *Unshape*. — D *perjureds*. — As to
 the dissyllable *perjuries*, see Abbott s. 468. — 24. ACDH *steare*; M *stear*;
 Haz. *star*. — 32. HM *friend*. — 34. C *neagre*; Haz. *negro*; HM *meager*.
 — 35. HM *chewing*. — 37. Qq *what's*. — CDH *to th'*.

God grant her grace amongst us long may reign,
 And those that would not have it so,
 Would that by Envy soon their hearts they might forego.

Com. The council, nobles, and this realm,
 Lord, guide it still with thy most holy hand!
 The Commons and the subjects, grant them grace,
 Their prince to serve, her to obey, and treason to deface:
 Long may she reign in joy and great felicity,
 Each Christian heart do say Amen with me. [Exeunt.]

- Envy.* This °scrambling raven with his needy beard,
 Will I whet on to write a comedy;
 40 Wherein shall be compos'd dark sentences,
 Pleasing to factious brains:
 And every otherwhere place me a jest,
 Whose high abuse shall more torment than blows.
 Then I myself, quicker than lightning,
 45 Will fly me to a puissant magistrate,
 And waiting with a trencher at his back,
 In midst of jollity rehearse those galls,
 With some additions, so lately vented in your theatre:
 He upon this cannot but make complaint,
 50 To your great danger, or at least restraint.
Com. Ha, ha, ha! I laugh to hear thy folly;
 This is a trap for boys, not men, nor such,
 Especially desertful in their doings,
 Whose staid discretion rules their purposes.
 55 I and my faction do eschew those vices.
 But see, O see, the weary sun for rest
 Hath lain his golden compass in the west,
 Where he perpetual bide and ever shine,
 As David's offspring in this happy clime.
 60 Stoop, Envy, stoop, bow to the earth with me,
 Let's beg our pardon on our bended knee. *[They kneel.*
Envy. My power has lost her might, and Envy's date's expired,
 Yon splendent majesty has 'fell'd my sting,
 And I amazed am. *[Fall down and quake.*
 65 *Com.* Glorious and wise Arch-Cæsar on this earth,

38. *needy beard.* Cp. The Taming of the Shrew III, 2, 177 seq.: *his beard grew thin and hungerly | And seem'd to ask him sops as he was drinking.* — 44. *lightning*, pronounce *light(e)ning*; see Abbott s. 477. Cp. Lear IV, 7. — 47. *Qq gaules*; Haz. *galls.* — 48. '*The words SO LATELY are a manifest interpolation — perhaps put in by the printer to make the readers of 1610 [1609] think that the lines alluded to a quite recent event.*' R. Simpson, The Academy, April 29, 1876, p. 401. — 49. *D upon*; CHM *on.* — 50. *CD your*; HM *our.* — 53. *M deceitful.* — 57. *C in the west*; DHM *to the west.* — 59. *C this*; DHM *his.* — 61. CHM *pardon*; D *pardons.* — 62. *and om.* Qq. — 63. *Om.* HM. — '*FELLED i. e. refelled, used in the sense of repelled as in Measure for Measure V, 1: How I persuaded, how I pray'd and kneel'd; | How he refell'd me, and how I replied.*' Coll.

At whose appearance Envy's stricken dumb,
 And all bad things cease operation,
 Vouchsafe to pardon our unwilling error,
 So late presented to your gracious view,
 And we'll endeavour with excess of pain, 70
 To please your senses in a choicer strain.
 Thus we commit you to the arms of night,
 Whose spangled darkness would, for your delight,
 Strive to excel the day: be blessed then,
 Who other wishes, let him never speak — 75

Envy.

Amen!

To Fame and Honour we commend your rest,
 Live still more happy, every hour more blest.

66. C *stricken*; D *stroken*; HM *strucken*. — 69. H *our gracious*. —
 73. C *carcass*; D *carcase*: happily corrected by Coll.

E. KARRAS, Printer, Halle.

NOTES ON ELIZABETHAN DRAMATISTS.

NOTES ON ELIZABETHAN DRAMATISTS

WITH

CONJECTURAL EMENDATIONS OF THE TEXT.

BY

KARL ELZE.

HALLE:

MAX NIEMEYER.

1880.

PREFACE.

PART of the following Notes and Emendations have already appeared in various Periodicals, both German and English, and they have shared the fate incident to all ephemeral publications — they have been little heeded and soon forgotten. I have therefore yielded to the temptation of attempting to preserve in a more permanent shape, these *disiecti membra critici*, and of adding to them fresh matter hitherto unpublished.

It is well known, that conjectural emendations are not unfrequently written on the spur of the moment instead of being as fully matured as other literary productions. At the present day when scholars almost all over the world are busy in translating, explaining, and revising the works of Shakspeare and his contemporaries, critics are naturally apprehensive lest they be anticipated in their emendations and therefore hasten to avail themselves of some one or other of the numerous opportunities offered to them for publication. Sober second thoughts and better wisdom are wont to come after the *fait accompli*. when the critic awakes to the knowledge that Goethe's beautiful line, —

Es irrt der Mensch, so lang er strebt,

is no less true of verbal criticism than of morals. Numerous conjectures, therefore, have to be withdrawn, a penalty which

all verbal critics, more or less, have had to pay, and always will have; for verbal criticism neither can, nor will, be stopped: it is essential to the advancement of learning. The eminent philologist Gottfried Hermann, who stands in the front rank of verbal critics, in one of his lectures, delivered it as his conviction that a verbal critic of the true stamp should be willing like Saturn to devour his own offspring. As one of his disciples, therefore, I cannot be blamed if, following his precept and example, I hereby eat those conjectural emendations of Elizabethan dramatists which I have hitherto published and which are not contained in my editions of Elizabethan plays, in Messrs Warnke's and Præscholdt's Edition of 'Mucedorus', and in the present collection; at the same time let me breathe the hope that the emendations published in those editions and in this collection may not need, at some future day, to be subjected to the same Saturnian process. My conjectural emendations in the text of 'Mucedorus', which appeared originally in the *Shakespeare-Jahrbuch* XIII, 45 seqq., have been excluded from the present collection merely on the ground that almost all of them — and some fresh ones to boot — have been embodied in the edition of that play by Messrs Warnke and Præscholdt. The emendations of 'Mucedorus' contained in the present volume have not been published before.

Halle, November 1879.

K. E.

CONTENTS.

Anonymous Plays.

	Page
Arden of Feversham, I	1
The Birth of Merlin, II—VI	1
Edward III, VII—XI	4
Fair Em, XII—XXX	6
Histrio-Mastix, XXXI	20
The London Prodigal, XXXII—XXXV	20
Mucedorus, XXXVI—XL	22
No-body and Some-body, XLI	26
The Play of Stucley, XLII	26

Chapman.

Alphonsus, XLIII	26
----------------------------	----

Greene.

Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay, XLIV	27
--	----

Marlowe.

Tamburlaine, XLV—XLVII	28
Edward II, XLVIII—XLIX	30

Shakespeare and Fletcher.

The Two Noble Kinsmen, L	31
------------------------------------	----

Shakespeare.

The Tempest, LI—LVI	33
The Two Gentlemen of Verona, LVII	40

VIII

CONTENTS.

	Page
A Midsummer-Night's Dream, LVIII—LXI	41
The Merchant of Venice, LXII—LXVI	44
As You Like It, LXVII	49
The Taming of the Shrew, LXVIII—LXXXIII	50
Twelfth Night, LXXIV	55
King John, LXXV—LXXXII	56
Romeo and Juliet, LXXXIII	66
Timon of Athens, LXXXIV—LXXXV	76
Julius Cæsar, LXXXVI—LXXXVII	79
Hamlet, LXXXVIII—XCIX	81
Othello, C	123

Addenda.

Fair Em, XX. XXIV. XXVI. XXX	125
--	-----

ANONYMOUS PLAYS.

I.

Then is there Michael, and the painter too,
Chief actors to Arden's overthrow.

ARDEN OF FEVERSIAM, III, 5 (ED. DELIUS 45).

Is *Chief* to be taken as a so-called monosyllabic foot — followed by a trochee! — or are we to read: —

Chief actors *both* to Arden's overthrow?

II.

Toelio. Me, Madam! 's foot! I'd be loath that any man should make a holy-day for me yet:

In brief, 'tis thus: There's here arriv'd at court,

Sent by the Earl of Chester to the king,

A man of rare esteem for holiness,

A reverend hermit, that by miracle

Not onely sav'd our army,

But without aid of man o'erthrew

The pagan host, and with such wonder, sir,

As might confirm a kingdom to his faith.

THE BIRTH OF MERLIN, I, 1 (ED. DELIUS 5).*

* Both here, and in the passages taken from Edward III and The London Prodigal, I have not quoted the Tauchnitz Edition of the Doubtful Plays, since its text, as far as I have compared it, does not differ from that of Delius.

These lines should be thus regulated: —

Ioclio. Me, madam! 'S foot! I'd be loth that any man
Should make a holiday for me yet.
In brief, 'tis thus: there's here arriv'd at court,
Sent by the Earl of Chester to the king,
A man of rare esteem for holiness,
A reverend hermit, that by miracle
Not only sav'd our army, but without
The aid of man o'erthrew the pagan host,
And with such wonder, sir, as might confirm
A kingdom to his faith.

The monosyllabic pronunciation of *madam* (in the first line) is too frequent to call for any further remark. In the second line a syllable is wanting; the regular blank verse might be restored, if we were to read: —

Should make a holiday for *my sake* yet.

III.

Prince. Nay, noble Edol, let us here take counsel,
It cannot hurt,
It is the surest garrison to safety.

THE BIRTH OF MERLIN, IV, 2 (DEL. 71).

Arrange and transpose: —

Prince. Nay, noble Edol,
Let us *take counsel here*, it cannot hurt,
It is the surest garrison to safety.

Some twenty lines lower down we meet with a striking parallel, as far as versification is concerned: —

Prince. Hold, noble Edol,
Let's hear what articles he can enforce.

IV.

Prince. Look, Edol: Still this fiery exhalation shoots
His frightful horrors on th' amazed world.

THE BIRTH OF MERLIN, IV, 5 (DEL. 74).

Arrange: —

Prince. Look, Edol:

Still this fiery exhalation shoots &c.

Still to be considered as a so-called monosyllabic foot (cf. Abbott, Shakespearian Grammar, 482), or if this should be deemed insufficient to meet the requirements of the metre, the imperative *look* to be repeated: —

Prince. Look, Edol:

Look, still this fiery exhalation shoots
His frightful horrors on th' amaz'd world.

—

V.

Nor shall his conquering foot be forc'd to stand,
Till Rome's imperial wreath hath crown'd his fame
With monarch of the west, from whose seven hills
With conquest, and contributory kings,
He back returns —

THE BIRTH OF MERLIN, IV, 5 (DEL. 78).

Qy. read: —

With th' (or *With'*) *monarchy of th' west, &c.?*

—

VI.

Tenebrarum precis, divitiarum et inferorum deus, hunc
Incubum in ignis æterni abyssum accipite —

THE BIRTH OF MERLIN, V, 1 (DEL. 82).

Qy. read, — *Tenebrarum princeps*, divitiarum et inferorum deus, &c.? Nash's Pierce Pennilesse is inscribed 'To the High and Mightie Prince of Darknesse,' &c.

VII.

Edw. Whose lives, my lady?

Coun. My thrice loving liege,
Your queen, and Salisbury, my wedded husband.

EDWARD III, II, 2 (DEL. 34 SEQ.).

The Countess of Salisbury has no occasion to lay stress on the king's love for her; on the contrary she thinks it incumbent on her to assure him of her own love, which is indeed no guilty, adulterous love, but that true and noble affection which every vassal and subject owes his liege. It seems, therefore, that the poet wrote: — *My thrice lovèd liege*. (Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XIII, 78 seq.)

VIII.

Next, — insomuch thou hast infring'd thy faith,
Broke league and solemn covenant made with me, —
I hold thee for a false pernicious wretch.

EDWARD III, III, 3 (DEL. 48).

This, I presume, is the reading of the quartos. Capell, however, (*Prolusions; or, Select Pieces of Antient Poetry*, London, 1760) reads *a most pernicious wretch*, and, in fact, it does seem that the two adjectives *false* and *pernicious* do not well agree with one another, although they give an unexceptionable sense. Qy. — *a false perfidious wretch?* (Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XIII, 80.)

IX.

And with a strumpet's artificial line
To paint thy vitious and deformed cause.

EDWARD III, III, 3 (DEL. 49).

Read: — *artificial lime*. (Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XIII, 81.)

X.

Upon my soul, had Edward prince of Wales,
Engag'd his word, writ down his noble hand,
For all your knights to pass his father's land,
The royal king, to grace his warlike son,
Would not alone safe-conduct give to them,
But with all bounty feasted them and theirs.

EDWARD III, IV, 5 (DEL. 75).

Grammar, I think, requires either: —

Had not alone safe-conduct *given* to them,

or: —

But with all bounty *feast both* them and theirs.

As, however, these alterations might be justly thought too bold, a contraction may be suggested: —

But with all *bounty'd* feasted them and theirs,

i. e. of course, *bounty had*.

XI.

Sec. Cit. The sun, dread lord, that in the western fall
Beholds us now low brought through misery,
Did in the orient purple of the morn
Salute our coming forth, when we were known;
Or may our portion be with damned fiends.

EDWARD III, V, 1 (DEL. 82).

One or two verses seem to be wanting between the fourth and fifth line. The king thinks himself cheated, as he has required the foremost citizens of the town to be delivered to him, whereas, he says, only *servile grooms* or *felonious robbers of the sea* are forthcoming; consequently he declares his promise null and void. The second citizen, however, denies this charge and solemnly assures the king that up to that very morning he and his fellow hostages had been indeed the chiefest citizens of their town. The missing verses, therefore, may have been to the following effect: —

when we were known

To be the chiefest men of all our town;

Of this, my sovereign lord, be well assur'd,

Or may our portion be with damnèd fiends.

(Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XIII, 83.)

XII.

Wm. Cong. Ah, Marques Lubeck, in thy power it lies
To rid my bosom of these thrallèd dumps.

FAIR EM ED. DELIUS, 2. — SIMPSON, THE SCHOOL OF
SHAKSPERE, II, 408.

William confesses to Marquess Lubeck that 'the strength of private cares subdues him more than all the world' and that he, 'a conqueror at arms', is now 'thrall'd to unarmed thoughts'. We may, therefore, well feel tempted to identify William's dumps with these unarmed thoughts and to read *these thralling dumps* i. e. these dumps that are enthralling me. But twelve lines *antè* the Conqueror says that he turns his conquering eyes to 'coward looks and beaten fantasies', whence it would seem evident that *beaten fantasies* and *thrallèd dumps* are intended to denote one and the same

thing; William's fantasies and dumps have been beaten and enthralled by the power of beauty, or, as the author quaintly expresses it, by the flames of beauty blazing on Lubbeck's shield. Compare Shakespeare, Sonnet CXXIV: —

It suffers not in smiling pomp, nor falls
Under the blow of thralled discontent,
Whereto the inviting time our fashion calls.

The Taming of the Shrew I, I, 224: —

And let me be a slave, to achieve that maid
Whose sudden sight hath thrall'd my wounded eye.

Instead of *rid* Delius erroneously reads *aid*.

XIII.

Marq. That same is Blanch, daughter to the king,
The substance of the shadow that you saw.

FAIR EM, 8. — SIMPSON, II, 416.

S. Walker, *Versification*, 206 seqq., has endeavoured to show that *daughter* is sometimes used as a trisyllable, although in some cases he is doubtful, whether the passage ought not rather to be amended. In the present line the trisyllabic pronunciation of the word would imply the admission of a trochee in the third foot, which would produce a halting and inharmonious verse. Simpson has added the article *the* before *daughter*. I should prefer *sole daughter*; *sole daughter*, *sole son*, *sole child*, and *sole heir* being, as it were, proverbial phrases of almost daily occurrence. Lower down (Delius, 39. — Simpson, II, 451) we are, in fact, told that Blanch is the king's 'only daughter',

'The only stay and comfort of his life.'

Compare No. XXX.

XIV.

Ill head, worse-featur'd, uncomely, nothing courtly,
Swart and ill-favour'd, a collier's sanguine skin.

FAIR EM, 8. — SIMPSON, II, 416.

What does *Ill head* mean? We do not want a substantive here, but an adjective that will serve, as it were, as a positive to the comparative *worse-featured*. In a word, I think we ought to read *Ill-shaped*. That the shape of the lady cannot be passed over with silence becomes evident from William the Conqueror's eulogy on the beauty of Mariana twenty lines below. There he says: —

A modest countenance; no heavy sullen look;
Not very fair, but richly deck'd with favour;
A sweet face; an exceeding dainty hand;
A body, were it framed all of wax
By all the cunning artists of the world,
It could not better be proportioned.

By the way, it may be remarked that instead of *framed all of wax* Délius erroneously reads *formed &c.* The passage from *The Comedy of Errors*, IV, 2, 19 seqq. very aptly quoted by Simpson speaks strongly in favour of my suggestion. It is to the following effect: —

He is deformed, crookèd, old and sere,
Ill-faced, worse-bodied, shapeless everywhere;
Vicious, ungentle, foolish, blunt, unkind,
Stigmatical in making, worse in mind.

XV.

Wm. Conq. Yes, my Lord; she is counterfeit indeed,
For there is the substance that best contents me.

FAIR EM, 9. — SIMPSON, II, 417.

Simpson proposes to read, either: —

For there is the substance that doth best content me,
or: —

For there is the substance best contenteth me.
I should prefer: —

For there *the substance is* that best contents me,
or (what would 'best content me'): —

For *there's* the substance that *contents me best*.

XVI.

Full ill this life becomes thy heavenly look,
Wherein sweet love and virtue sits enthroned.
Bad world, where riches is esteem'd above them both,
In whose base eyes nought else is bountiful!

FAIR EM, 10. — SIMPSON, II, 418 SEQ.

Is the third line perhaps to be classed with those Alexandrines of which Abbott in his Shakespearian Grammar 499 gives such curious instances? Or are we to admit an emendation and read: —

Bad world, where riches is esteem'd *'bove both?*

Chetwood, according to Simpson, reads: —

Bad world! where riches 'bove both are esteemed most.
This would be getting out of the frying-pan into the fire.
According to Delius XI, however, the line, as altered by
Chetwood, seems to run thus: —

Bad world! where riches is esteemed most.

XVII.

Mount. Nature unjust, in utterance of thy art,
To grace a peasant with a princess' fame!

FAIR EM, 11. — SIMPSON, II, 419 SEQ.

For *some* Chetwood writes *frame*; neither can be right. Perhaps we should read *face* which would agree much better with Mountney's subsequent praise of 'her beauty's worthiness'. Twelve lines below Simpson needlessly adds *out* —

And she thou seekest [out] in foreign regions.

Read *seek'st* (with Delius) and pronounce *re-gi-ons*.

XVIII.

Val. Love, my lord? of whom?

Mount. Em, the miller's daughter of Manchester.

FAIR EM, 12. — SIMPSON, II, 421.

Em may be considered as a monosyllabic foot; by the repetition of *of*, however, a regular blank verse might be obtained: —

Of Em, the miller's daughter of Manchester.

XIX.

Man. Ah, Em! were he the man that causeth this
mistrust,

I should esteem of thee as at the first.

FAIR EM, 15. — SIMPSON, II, 424.

If verses of six feet are not to be admitted, the words *Ah*, *Em!* may be easily placed in what is called an interjectional line. Thirty eight lines below, however, the case is more difficult; there we read: —

Ah, Em! faithful love is full of jealousy.

Simpson's proposal to expunge *Em*, in order to restore the metre, can hardly find favour, as it is customary with our poet to add the name of the person addressed, especially

after an interjection which begins the verse. Thus, e. g.

Delius, 15. — Simpson, II, 424: —

Believe me, Em, it is not time to jest.

Delius, 16. — Simpson, II, 425: —

This, Em, is noted and too much talk'd on.*

Delius, 16. — Simpson, II, 425: —

Ah, Manvile, little wottest thou.

Delius, 17. — Simpson, II, 426: —

Nay, stay, fair Em.

Delius, 18. — Simpson, II, 427: —

Ah, Em, fair Em, if art can make thee whole.

It would, therefore, be in unison with this custom, if the poet had written: —

Ah, Em!

All faithful love is full of jealousy.

The original reading might be defended on the usual plea that the first syllable of *faithful* is to be considered as a so-called monosyllabic foot.

XX.

Two gentlemen attending on Duke William,

Mountney and Valingford, as I heard them named,

Ofttimes resort to see and to be seen.

FAIR EM, 15. — SIMPSON, II, 424.

Those critics who require regular blank verse to be restored

* Thus the line stands in Delius's edition. Simpson prints *talked* and repeats *is* before *too*; he evidently reads *noted* as a monosyllable, in accordance with the rule explained by Abbott, *Shakespearian Grammar*, 472. The repetition of *is*, however, seems needless, since the line might as well be scanned thus:

This, Em, is not'd and too much talk'd on.

everywhere may readily correct the second line by enclosing it in a parenthesis and expunging *as*: —

(Mountney and Valingford I heard them named).

The name of *Valingford*, however, here and elsewhere seems to have been used as a dissyllable by the poet; thus, e. g. on p. 23 (II, 433) and p. 28 (II, 439), if I am not mistaken in the conviction that these passages, now printed as prose, were originally written in verse. The former passage, printed as verse, would run thus: —

'Zounds! what a cross is this to my conceit!
 But Valingford, search the depth of this device.
 Why may not this be some feign'd subtlety
 By Mountney's invention, to th' intent
 That I, seeing such occasion, should leave off
 My suit, and not persist t' solicit her
 Of love? I'll try th' event. If I perceive
 By any means th' effect of this deceit,
 Procur'd by thy means, friend Mountney,
 The one of us is like t' repent our bargain.

On p. 28 the following verses may be restored: —

Mount. Valingford, so hardly I digest an injury,
 Thou'st proffer'd me, as, were 't not I detest
 To do what stands not with the honour of my name,
 Thy death should pay the ransom of thy fault.

Injury, in the first line, is to be pronounced as a dissyllable. The second line is printed from Simpson's text; Delius reads — *As were it not that I detest*. Which of the two editions — if either of them — may represent the reading of the quartos, I do not know. In regard to the third line cf. Abbott, *Shakespearian Grammar*, 499. It cannot be denied, however, that another, and perhaps a safer, arrangement might be devised, viz. —

Mount. Valingford,
So hardly I digest an injury,
Thou'st proffer'd me, &c.

 XXI.

Ah me, whom chiefly and most of all it doth concern,
To spend my time in grief, and vex my soul, &c.

FAIR EM, 16. — SIMPSON, II, 425.

Dele — *chiefly and.*

 XXII.

I speak not, sweet, in person of my friend,
But for myself, whom, if that love deserve
To have regard, being honourable love;
Not base affects of loose lascivious love,
Whom youthful wantons play and dally with,
But that unites in honourable bands of holy rites,
And knits the sacred knot that God's —

FAIR EM, 17. — SIMPSON, II, 426 SEQ.

Instead of *loose lascivious love* read *loose lascivious lust*. Compare *ant^h* (Delius, 6. — Simpson, II, 413): —

Let not vehement sighs,
Nor earnest vows importing fervent love,
Render thee subject to the wrath of lust —
which Chetwood has wrongly altered to *the wrath of love*. —
For the faulty repetition of *love* cf. No. XXX and No. LXIX.
In the last line but one omit *honourable* before *bands*; it is likewise owing to faulty repetition.

XXIII.

Em. Speak you to me, sir?

Mount. To thee, my only joy.

Em. I cannot hear you.

Mount. O plague of fortune! O hell without compare!
What boots it us, to gaze and not enjoy!

FAIR EM, 18. — SIMPSON, II, 427.

I cannot agree with Simpson, who remarks on the fourth line — ‘*Dele oh*’ [before *hell*]. — Instead of *enjoy* in the fifth line Simpson suggests *hear*, which, he adds, would rhyme with *compare*. Apart from this somewhat questionable rhyme, *hear* cannot be right, since it is applicable only to Em. According to my conviction a verb or phrase is wanted which applies to both Em and Mountney, for Mountney asks, *What boots it us? Qy. and not converse?* Or a line to the following effect may have dropped out: —

and not enjoy

The sweet converse of mutual love between us.

XXIV.

Val. But is it [Delius: it is] possible you should be taken on such a sudden? Infortunate Valingford, to be thus cross’d in thy love! — Fair Em, I am not a little sorry to see this thy hard hap. Yet nevertheless, I am acquainted with a learned physician that will do anything for thee at my request. To him will I resort and inquire his judgment, as concerning the recovery of so excellent a sense.

FAIR EM, 22. — SIMPSON, II, 432.

Val. No? Not the thing will do thee so much good? Sweet Em, hither I came to parley of love, hoping to have

found thee in thy wonted prosperity. And have the gods so unmercifully thwarted my expectation, by dealing so sinisterly with thee, sweet Em?

FAIR EM, 22. — SIMPSON, II, 432.

These passages I take to be two more instances of metrical composition that have degenerated into prose by the negligence or ignorance of transcribers and compositors. With the aid of a few alterations the first passage may be thus restored: —

Infortunate Valingford, to be thus cross'd
 In love! — Fair Em, I'm not a little sorry
 To see this thy hard hap, yet ne'ertheless
 I am acquainted with a learn'd physician
 That will do any thing for thee
 At my request; to him will I resort
 And will inquire his judgment as concerning
 Th' recovery of so excellent a sense.

After the third line a verse seems to be wanting. The fifth line may be easily extended to a regular blank verse by the addition of *he can* after *any thing*. The second passage may have come from the poet's pen in the following shape: —

No? Not the thing will do thee so much good?
 Sweet Em, I hither came to parle of love
 Hoping t' have found thee in thy wonted state;
 And have the Gods thwart'd so unmercifully
 My hope, by dealing so sinisterly
 With thee?

Em. Good sir, no more. It fits not me

To have respect to such vain phantasies &c.

The words *Sweet Em* in the sixth line (after *thee*) are an unquestionable interpolation. *Prosperity* and *expectation*, on the other hand, cannot be removed without some violence; but

most of the so-called pseudo-Shakespearean plays have been handed down to us in a state of such rank corruption, that a critic who attempts to amend them, must be allowed to walk 'with a larger tether' than is granted elsewhere.

 XXV.

Val. Yet, sweet Em, accept this jewel at my hand,
Which I bestow on thee in token of my love.

FAIR EM, 23. — SIMPSON, II, 432.

The words of address should form an interjectional line and the verses be regulated thus: —

Val. Yet, sweet Em,
Accept this jewel at my hand, which I
Bestow on thee in token of my love.

Chetwood, who wants the words *Em* and *on thee* to be expunged, is evidently wrong.

A similar instance occurs a few pages farther on (Delius, 32. — Simpson, II, 443): —

Em. Trotter, lend me thy hand; and as thou lovest me, keep my counsel, and justify whatsoever I say, and I'll largely requite thee.

By a few slight alterations the following verses may be restored: —

Em. Trotter,
Lend me thy hand, and as thou lovest me
Pray keep my counsel, and justify *whatever*
I say, and *largely* I'll requite thee.

Let me add a third passage (Delius, 33. — Simpson, II, 444): —

Em. Good father, let me not stand as an open gazing-stock to every one, but in a place alone, as fits a creature so miserable.

Arrange and read: —

Em. Good father,
 Let me not stand an open gazing-stock
 To every one, but in a place alone
 That fits a creature *that's* so miserable.

XXVI.

Wm. Hence, villains, hence! How dare you lay
 your hands

Upon your sovereign!

Sol. Well, sir; will deal for that.

But here comes one will remedy all this.

FAIR EM, 35 SEQ. — SIMPSON, II, 447.

In the first line Simpson reads *Dare you [to] lay*, and in the third line *we will deal for that*. The reading of the quartos is nowhere given. The second and third line, in my opinion, should be joined and corrected thus: —

Upon your sovereign!

Sol.

Well, we'll deal for that.

XXVII.

Soldier. My lord, watching this night in the camp
 We took this man, and know not what he is.

FAIR EM, 36. — SIMPSON, II, 447.

Is the first line to be scanned as a verse of four feet: —

My lord, watching this night in th' camp?

A trochee in the second place would be unusual, to say the least. Or is *lord* to be pronounced as a dissyllable? Cf. Marlow's Tragedy of Edward II ed. by the Rev. F. G. Fleay,

London, 1877, p. 117. Or are we to call in the aid of an emendation and read: —

My lord, *in* watching this night in the camp?

Compare sixteen lines lower down: —

In knowing this, I know thou art a traitor.

XXVIII.

Wm. Conq. In knowing this, I know thou art a traitor;
A rebel and mutinous conspirator.

Why, Demarch; know'st thou who I am?

FAIR EM, 36. — SIMPSON, II, 448.

Simpson adds the indefinite article before *mutinous* and thus produces a verse of six feet. The line is quite right as it stands, since *rebel* is to be pronounced as a monosyllable. In the third line Simpson reads *knowest*, a trochee that restores the metre of the verse. *Why* is, of course, to be considered as a so-called monosyllabic foot.

XXIX.

Wm. Conq. Where's Lord Dirot?

Dem. In arms, my gracious lord,

Not past two miles from hence,

As credibly I am ascertained.

FAIR EM, 37. — SIMPSON, II, 449.

Arrange and read: —

Dem. In arms, my gracious lord, not past two miles

From hence, as credibly I'm ascertain'd.

In the first line Simpson reads *Where is*, against the metre.

XXX.

Amb. Marry thus: the king of Denmark and my
Sov'reign

Doth send to know of thee, what is the cause,

That, injuriously, against the law of arms

Thou hast stol'n away his only daughter Blanch,

The only stay and comfort of his life?

Therefore, by me

He willeth thee to send his daughter Blanch

Or else forthwith he will levy such an host,

As soon shall fetch her in despite of thee.

FAIR EM, 39. — SIMPSON, II, 451.

Arrange and read: —

Amb. Marry thus:

The king of Denmark and my sovereign

Doth send to know of thee, what is the cause,

That thou hast stol'n, against the law of arms,

Injuriously away his daughter Blanch,

The only stay and comfort of his life?

Therefore by me he willeth thee to send her,

Or else forthwith he'll levy such an host,

As soon shall fetch her in despite of thee.

The reiterations of *only* in the fourth and fifth, and of *his daughter Blanch* in the fourth and seventh lines are evident 'diplographies', if this technical term of German critics may be introduced into English; it might, I think, conveniently supersede the somewhat heavy and vague circumlocution of S. Walker, Crit. Exam., I, 276. A similar instance of diplography has occurred already in No. XXII. Critics of such thorough-going conservatism as to shield even glaring diplographies, may perhaps prefer to read the third and fourth lines thus: —

That, 'gainst the law of arms, injuriously
 Thou 'st stol'n away his only daughter Blanch.
 The sixth and seventh lines have been contracted by Chet-
 wood into the following: —

Therefore by me he wills thee send her back.
 Needlessly bold and needlessly harsh.

XXXI.

Are not you Merchants, that from East to West,
 From the Antarcticke to the Arctick Poles,
 Bringing all treasure that the earth can yeeld?

HISTRIO-MASTIX, APUD SIMPSON, THE SCHOOL OF
 SHAKSPERE, II, 44 SEQ.

Read: — *Bring in all treasure. — Qy. Pole?*

XXXII.

Flow. Sen. I' faith, sir, according to the old proverb:
 The child was born, and cried,
 Became a man, after fell sick, and died.

THE LONDON PRODIGAL, I, 1. — MALONE, SUPPLEMENT,
 II, 455. — HAZLITT, THE SUPPLEMENTARY WORKS OF
 WM. SHAKSPEARE, 209.

Afler, in the last line, looks like an interpolation and should
 be expunged. By the way, it may be remarked that in Mr
 Carew Hazlitt's English Proverbs and Proverbial Phrases this
 'old proverb' is not to be found.

XXXIII.

Sir Lanc. Where is this inn? We are past it, Daffodil.

Daf. The good sign is here, sir, but the back gate
is before.

THE LONDON PRODIGAL, I, 2. — MAL., II, 462. — HAZ., 212.

Qy. read, — *The gate sign* instead of *The good sign*. — According to Malone, the folios as well as the modern editions read *the black gate*; instead of which Malone has restored *the back gate* from the quarto.

XXXIV.

Arti. Why, there 'tis now: our year's wages and our
vails will scarce pay for broken swords and bucklers that we
use in our quarrels. But I'll not fight if Daffodil be o' t' other
side, that's flat.

THE LONDON PRODIGAL, II, 4. — MAL., II, 480. — HAZ., 222.

Read, — *in your quarrels*. The servants do not use their
swords and bucklers in their own quarrels, but in those of
their masters. 'Sir', says Artichoke to Sir Lancelot, his master,
towards the close of the scene, 'we have been scouring of
our swords and bucklers for your defence.'

XXXV.

M. Flowe. Now, God thank you, sweet lady. If you
have any friend, or garden-house where you may employ a
poor gentleman as your friend, I am yours to command in
all secret service.

THE LONDON PRODIGAL, V, 1. — MAL., II, 517. — HAZ., 241.

Read: *if you have any field or garden-house*. *Friend* crept
in, by anticipation, from the following line.

XXXVI.

Flying for succour to their dankish caves.

MUCEDORUS ED. DELIUS, 4. — ED. WARNKE AND
 PROESCHOLDT, 22. — HAZLITT'S DODSLEY, VII, 204.

My conjectural emendation *dankish* has been received into the text by Messrs Warnke and Proescholdt; the old editions read *Danish*, a reading which cannot lay claim to a gentler appellation than that of nonsense. *Dankish* occurs in the Comedy of Errors, V, 1, 247: —

And in a dark and dankish vault at home.

Another emendation may, however, be offered, viz. *dampish*. Cf. The Birth of Merlin, IV, 1 (ed. Delius 69): —

Then know, my lord, there is a dampish cave,
 The nightly habitation of these dragons,
 Vaulted beneath &c.

The Play of Stucley 668 (Simpson, The School of Shakspeare, I, 185): —

When we are lodged within the dampish field.

 XXXVII.

Scg. [*Aside*] This seems to be a merry fellow.

MUCEDORUS, DEL., 13. — W. AND PR., 32. — H'S D., VII, 213.

A regular blank verse would be restored by the insertion of *very* before *merry*. That *very* was frequently interpolated has been shown by S. Walker, Crit. Exam., I, 268 seq. Cf. also No. XLI. Here we meet with an instance of its omission.

 XXXVIII.

Mouse. I think he was, for he said he did lead a salt-seller's life about the woods.

Seg. Thou wouldst say, a solitary life about the woods.

MUCEDORUS, DEL., 42. — W. AND PR., 64. — H's D., VII, 245.

Read: — a *solitary's* life about the woods.

XXXIX.

God grant her grace amongst us long may reign,
 And those that would not have it so,
 Would that by Envy soon their hearts they might forego.

Com. The council, and this realm,
 Lord, guide it still with thy most holy hand!
 The commons and the subjects, grant them grace,
 Their prince to serve, her to obey, and treason to deface:
 Long may she reign in joy and great felicity,
 Each Christian heart do say Amen with me! [*Exeunt.*

MUCEDORUS, W. AND PR., 77. — H's D., VII, 260.

These verses, which conclude the play in the quarto of 1598, have been transmitted to us in a state of such degeneracy as cannot be laid to the author's door, however poor a versifier he may have been. The second line consists of four, the third of six feet; the words *Would that*, which begin the third line, have simply slipped down from the second to the third line, or rather they were written in the margin and inserted in the wrong place by the compositor. For *realm* in the fourth line, however unexceptionable it may be *per se*, *land* should be substituted, as with this single exception the concluding speech of Comedy is in rhyme. This alteration is, moreover, supported by the concluding prayer in *The Three Lords and Three Ladies of London* (Dodsley ed. Hazlitt, VI, 501 seq). There we read: —

Her council wise and nobles of this land
 Bless and preserve, O Lord! with thy right hand.

Whether, or not the line should be filled up, it is difficult to decide, as it would, at the same time, involve the question, whether, instead of *guide it* in the following line, we should not read *guide them*. Both may be easily done, if the requisite boldness be conceded to the emendator. May not the author have written, e. g.: —

The council and the nobles of this land
 Lord, guide them still with thy most holy hand?

Of the two clauses *Their prince to serve* and *her to obey* in the seventh line one — most probably the second — is certainly a gloss and must be expunged; and the last line but one may be easily reduced to five feet either by the omission of *joy and* or of *great* before *felicity*, in which latter case *felicity* is to be pronounced as a trisyllable (flicity).* The corresponding line in the concluding prayer of The Three Lords and Three Ladies of London runs as follows: —

Lord! grant her health, heart's-ease, [*and*] joy and
 mirth.

The whole passage, therefore, would seem to have come originally from the author's pen in about the following shape: —

God grant her Grace amongst us long may reign,
 And would that those that would not have it so,
 By Envy soon their hearts they might forego.

Com. The council and the nobles of this land,
 Lord, guide them still with thy most holy hand!

* Felicity as a trisyllable occurs in Sir Thomas More's *Utopia* ed. Arber 167: —

Wherfore not Utopie, but rather rightely
 My name is Eutopie: A place of felicity.
 See Abbott, *Shakespearian Grammar*, 468.

The commons and the subjects, grant them grace,
 Their prince to serve and treason to deface:
 Long may she reign in joy and felicity,
 Each Christian heart do say Amen with me!

XL.

My power has lost her might, and Envy's date's expired,
 Yon splendent majesty has 'felled my sting,
 And I amazed am.

MUCEDORUS, DELIUS, 55. — W. AND PR., 78. — H's D., VII, 259.

And before *Envy's* has been added by the editors. The second line is wanting in the quartos of 1621 and 1668 and consequently in Delius's edition also. In my opinion, the three lines should be thus arranged: —

My power has lost her might, and Envy's date
 Expired is; yon splendent majesty
 Has 'fell'd my sting, and I amazèd am.

Or should we alter *Envy's* to *my*? A text so grossly corrupted as that of Mucedorus cannot be healed without boldness, although the less bold an emendation is, the greater claim it possesses on our approval. Now, if we read *my*, not only the addition of *and* would be spared, but also the division of the lines would remain untouched: —

My power has lost her might, my date's expir'd,
 Yon splendent majesty has 'felled my sting,
 And I amazèd am.

XLI.

I thank him, and so came to see the Court,
Where I am very much beholding to your kindness.

NO-BODY AND SOME-BODY, APUD SIMPSON, THE SCHOOL
OF SHAKSPERE, I, 322.

Dele *very* in the second line. Compare S. Walker, Crit. Exam.
I, 268 seqq. See also No. XXXVII.

XLII.

Ens. Lieutenant, he 's a gallant gentleman,
We know it well, and he that is not willing
To venture life with him, I would for my part
He might end his days worser than the pestilence.

THE PLAY OF STUCLEY, APUD SIMPSON, THE SCHOOL
OF SHAKSPERE, I, 185.

Dele *Hc* in the last line and write *th' pestilence*.

CHAPMAN.

XLIII.

Give me the master-key of all the doors.

ALPHONSUS ED. ELIZE, 43 AND 133.

The old editions read: —

Boy, give me the master-key of all the doors.

Another instance to the same effect occurs on p. 52 (cf. p. 135)
where the old editions read: —

Madam, that we have suffer'd you to kneel so long.

In both cases I have thought myself justified by the metre
in expunging the words of address *Boy* and *Madam*, as no

doubt such words may frequently have been interpolated by the actors. In the edition of Chapman's Works (Plays) by Richard Herne Shepherd (London, 1874) where my text of Alphonsus has been followed remarkably closely, without the least acknowledgment, *Boy* has been omitted, whilst *Madam* has been restored from the old edition. There are, however, two other ways of satisfying the requirements of the metre; one is, to place the words *Boy* and *Madam* in interjectional lines: —

Boy,

Give me the master-key &c.,

the other, to restore the metre by contractions: —

Boy, gíve | me th' má | ster-key' | of ál | the doórs,
and: —

Ma'am, thát | we've súf | fer'd you | to kneél | so lóng.
I now feel convinced that this last way was the poet's own scansion. (Anglia, herausgegeben von Wülcker und Trautmann, I, 344 seq.)

GREENE.

XLIV.

K. Hen. He shall, my lord; this motion likes me well.
We'll progress straight to Oxford with our trains,
And see what men our academy brings. —
And, wonder Vandermast, welcome to me:
In Oxford shalt thou find a jolly friar,
Call'd Friar Bacon, England's only flower.

FRIAR BACON AND FRIAR BUNGAY, SC. 4. — THE DRAMATIC
AND POETICAL WORKS OF R. GREENE AND G. PEELE
ED. DYCE, 159.

Dyce suggests *wondrous Vandermast* (he might have compared *wondrous Merlin*, *The Birth of Merlin* ed. Delius, 75); where-

as Prof. Ward (Marlowe's Tragical History of Doctor Faustus and Greene's Honourable History of Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay, Oxford; 1878, 220) sees no reason to alter the text and compares such compounds as A.-S. *wundor-werc*, or *wonder storie* (in The Knight's Tale [line?]) and *wonder chance* (in The Man of Lawes Tale 5465) to which he might have added *wonder thyng* in The Towneley Mysteries (Marriott, Collection of English Miracle Plays 138). But is the present case, where we have to deal with a proper name, to be classed unhesitatingly with such compounds? Are we not reminded involuntarily of Shakespeare's 'so rare a wonder'd father' (The Tempest, IV, 1, 122) and tempted to write *wonder'd Vandermast*? But our doubts are not even here at rest. Ferdinand when speaking of his rare-wondered father has just witnessed Prospero's 'most majestic and charmingly harmonious vision'. King Henry, however, has not yet seen the slightest proof of Vandermast's magic art; what reason has he to address him as a wonder, or a wondered artist? The Emperor, in presenting Vandermast to the king, has indeed praised his accomplishments, but he has been still more eloquent on the travels which the learned doctor has undertaken. Would it not, therefore, be much more to the purpose to read *wander'd Vandermast*? Compare Henry VIII, I, 3, 19: —

The reformation of our travell'd gallants;
That fill the court with quarrels, talk, and tailors.

MARLOWE.

XLV.

Myc. Well, here I swear by this my royal seat —

Cos. You may do well to kiss it then.

The second line, in my opinion, should be completed by the addition of *Myceles*: —

You may do well to kiss it then, *Myceles*.

 XLVI.

Tamb. Stay, Techelles; ask a parle first.

1 TAMBURLAINE, I, 2 (WORKS 11a).

The metre, I think, requires *parley*. The first foot of the line (*Stay*) is monosyllabic. Compare No. IV.

 XLVII.

And made a voyage into Europe.

2 TAMBURLAINE, I, 3 (WORKS 49a).

‘A word’, says Dyce, ‘dropt out from this line.’ I think not, but am persuaded, that Marlowe wrote *Europa*. Cf. R. Chester’s *Loves Martyr* ed. Grosart (for the New Shakspere Society) 24: —

Welcome immortal Bewtie, we will ride
 Ouer the Semi-circle of Europa,
 And bend our course where we will see the Tide,
 That partes the Continent of Africa,
 Where the great cham gouernes Tartaria;
 And when the starry Curtaine vales the night,
 In Paphos sacred Ile we meane to light.

The shortening of the penult in *Europa* will not seem strange when we compare *Euphrates* (1 Tamburlaine V, 2; Works 30b) and *Sarmata* (Marlowe, First Book of Lucan, Works 377a), beside the wellknown *Hypérion*, *Titus Andronicus* and others. False quantity in classical proper names

seems to be privileged. Cf. Marlowe's Doctor Faustus &c. ed. A. W. Ward p. 271 seq. S. Walker, Versification, 172 seq.

 XLVIII.

My lord, here comes the king, and the nobles,
From the parliament. I'll stand aside.

EDWARD II. — WORKS, 184a. — MARLOWE'S EDWARD II
ED. FLEAV, 51.

Although this is the reading of all the four quartos (1594, 1598, 1612 and 1622), the text must nevertheless be pronounced corrupt; the vocative *My lord* has no antecedent to which it might refer, and the verse, moreover, consists only of four feet. Dyce, therefore, transposes the words and reads *Here comes my lord the king*, an emendation which is greatly preferable to Cunningham's suggestion *By'r lord, here comes the king*; for Marlowe, as Mr. Fleay justly remarks, never makes use of similar oaths and protestations, and if he did, we should be prepared rather for *By'r lady* than for *By'r lord*. Mr. Fleay himself tries to heal the corruption by a different arrangement of the lines: —

Here comes my lord
The king and th' nobles from the parliament.
I'll stand aside.

In my opinion this is far from being an improvement. Dyce's reading is no doubt the most acceptable, and would meet all wishes, if it did complete the verse, which might be effected by the addition of a single monosyllabic: —

Here comes my lord the king and *all* the nobles
From th' parliament. I'll stand aside.
(Anglia, herausgegeben von Wülcker und Trautmann I, 348.)

XLIX.

But tell me, Mortimer, what's thy device
Against the stately triumph we decreed? &c.

EDWARD II (WORKS 194b). — FLEAY. 69.

A very apt illustration of these and the following lines is contained in the following passage from Neumayr von Ramssla, Johann Ernsten des Jüngern, Hertzogen zu Sachsen, Reise &c. (Leipzig, 1620) S. 179: 'Endlichen zeigte man I[hro] F[ürstlichen] G[naden] eine kleine *Galeria* [viz. at Whitehall], etwa 20 Schritt lang, so hinauss auffm Fluss gebawet, darinn hiengen auff beyden Seiten etliche hundert Schild von Pappen gemacht, daran waren allerley *emblemata* vnd Wort gemahlet vnd geschrieben. Wann Frewdenfest seynd, pflegen die Höffischen solche *inventiones* zu machen, vnd damit aufzuziehen. Wer nun was sonderlichs vnd denckwürdigis erfunden, dessen Schild wird zum Gedächtnüs dahin gehengt. Hinder am Ende dieses Gangs, ist der Gang etwas grösser, in solchem hiengen auch dergleichen schilde.'

SHAKESPEARE AND FLETCHER.

L.

You most coarse freeze capacities; ye fane judgements.

THE TWO NOBLE KINSMEN, III, 5; ED. LITTLEDALE, 52

AND 144 SEQ.

Mr Harold Littledale, the latest editor of this play, extends his note on the above line to an explanation of the much discussed phrase *Up-see Freeze*; *Freeze* he thinks to be equivalent with *Friesland Beer* and *up-see* to mean *drink, half-seas-over*. This explanation, however, has long been superseded. After what has been said by Nares s. v. and myself in my

edition of Chapman's *Alphonsus* 138 seq. I should not revert to the subject, if I were not able to bring forward some fresh passages that go far to show that *Upsee Freeze* or *Upsee Dutch* means 'in the Frisian or Dutch manner.' The first of these passages occurs in *A Pleasant Comedie of Pasquil and Katherine*, A. II (Simpson, *The School of Shakspeare*, II, 165): —

Pour wine, sound music, let our bloods not freeze.

Drink Dutch, like gallants, let's drink upsey freeze.

That is to say, the English gallants of the time used to drink in the Dutch or Frisian fashion, i. e. with the German drinking ceremonies, for Dutch, here as elsewhere, means German, and it is a wellknown fact that the German drinking ceremonies at that time had spread over Holland and even reached England. John Taylor, the Waterpoet, in his account of his journey to Hamburg (Three Weeks, Three Daies &c., Works, 1872, 3) says: 'and having upse-freez'd four pots of boon beer as yellow as gold' &c., which words I take to mean, having drunk four pots of beer after the Frisian manner. That '*Upsee Frieze cross*' means to drink with interlaced arms (*Brüderschaft trinken*), as I have conjectured, is confirmed by Nash, *Summer's Last Will and Testament* (apud Dodsley, 1825, IX, 49): 'A vous, monsieur Winter, a frolick upsy freese: cross, ho! super nagulum.' That is, let us cross or interlace our arms, as the Germans do when drinking *Brüderschaft*, and let us 'drench' our glasses 'to the bottom' so that what is left may stand on the thumb-nail. This, in German, is called to this day *die Nagelprobe machen*, and still forms part of the ceremony of drinking *Brüderschaft*. — A fourth allusion to 'Upsy Freeze' is contained in a work of much later time, viz. in Johann Georg Forster's *Briefwechsel herausgegeben von Th[erese] H[uber], geb. H[eyne]* (Leipzig, 1829) II, 671; it is in an English letter dated Overberg's

Conrays, August 27, 1775, and addressed to George Forster by the distinguished Swedish naturalist Andreas Sparrmann. 'Dear Sir', he writes, 'I'll have the pleasure by means of this letter to shake hands with you *'op sein goede Africanse Boers'*; for, as I have now for some time been in quarters by the Owerbergse peasants, you must give me leave to follow the customs of these good folks, who, without any other roundabout compliments, present their sharp hands, as the New Zealanders their carved noses, when a cordial salute is meant.' — There can be no doubt that *op sein goede Africanse Boers* means, 'in the true manner of the African Boers.' (Anglia, herausgegeben von Wüleker und Trautmann I, 347 seq.)

SHAKESPEARE.

II.

This wide-chapp'd rascal — would thou mightst lie
drowning
The washing of ten tides!

THE TEMPEST, I, 1, 60 SEQ.

I do not recollect whether or not any editor has already remarked that these words contain an allusion to the singular mode of execution to which pirates were condemned in England. 'Pirats and robbers by sea', says Harrison (Description of England ed. Furnivall, London, 1877, 229) 'are condemned in the court of admiraltie, and hanged on the shore at lowe water marke, where they are left till three tides have overwashed them.' According to Holinshed III, 1271, seven pirates were hanged on the riverside below London, on March 9,

1577—8. (Anglia, herausgegeben von Wülcker und Trautmann I, 338).

Prof. John W. Hales (in *The Academy* of Sept. 1, 1877, 220) has corroborated the above remark by two passages from Greene's *Tu Quoque* and from *Stow*, apud Dodsley ed. Hazlitt XI, 188. He also refers to the description of the Execution Dock at Wapping, in Murray's *Handbook for Kent*. 'Ten tides', he justly adds, 'are of course a comic exaggeration, three tides being no sufficiently severe punishment for "this wide-chapp'd rascal", the boatsman'.

LII.

This blue-eyed hag was hither brought with child
 And here was left by sailors.

THE TEMPEST, I, 2, 270 SEQ.

Staunton and Mr P. A. Daniel (*Notes and Conjectural Emendations* 9) ingeniously propose *blear-eyed*. In favour of this suggestion it may be added that Reginald Scot, in his *Discoverie of Witchcraft*, B. I, Chap. 3 (apud Drake, *Shakspeare and his Times* II, 478), writes indeed that witches 'are women which be commonly old, lame, *bleare-eyed*, pale, fowle, and full of wrinkles.' Mr Wright, on the other hand, in his annotated edition of this play, sustains the reading of the folio; '*blue-eyed*', he says, 'does not describe the colour of the pupil of the eye, but the livid colour of the eye-lid, and a blue eye in this sense was a sign of pregnancy'; in proof of which Mr Wright quotes a passage from Webster's *Duchess of Malfi*. Nowhere indeed, if not in the passage under discussion, does Shakespeare mean the colour of the pupil, when speaking of blue eyes, but the livid circles round the eyes or the bluish eyelids; thus, e. g., in *As You Like It*, III,

2, 393: 'a blue eye and sunken'. This, I think, admits of no doubt, and is corroborated by a passage in Spenser's *Faerie Queene* I, 2, 45, where the poet ascribes 'blue eyelids' to Duessa when she has swooned and lies seemingly dead: —

Her eyelids blew
And dimmed sight with pale and deadly hew
At last she gan up lift.

Here too the adjective 'blue' is to be taken in its old sense, viz. 'livid'; see Mr Skeat's *Etymological Dictionary* s. v. Blue.

It would be of no common interest to know exactly what Shakespeare meant by 'grey eyes' and what colour of the eyes stood highest in favour with Elizabethan England. Until some such information be exhumed a doubt may remain concerning the 'blue-eyed hag', as a very different explanation seems to be suggested by some passages in a living American poet, from which it might be inferred that, in popular belief, blue eyes may possibly have been thought characteristic of witches. Mr J. G. Whittier, who is evidently conversant with the particulars of those persecutions for witchcraft that so darkly fill the pages of early American history, says (*The Vision of Echard and Other Poems*, Boston, 1878, 22): —

A blue-eyed witch sits on the bank
And weaves her net for thee;

and again on p. 26: —

Her spectre walks the parsonage,
And haunts both hall and stair;
They know her by the great blue eyes
And floating gold of hair.

I merely throw this out as a hint, but, as it seems to me, the subject is deserving of further investigation.

LIII.

Pro. Goe make thy selfe like a Nymph o' th' Sea,
 Be subject to no sight but thine, and mine: inuisible
 To euery eye-ball else: goe take this shape
 And hither come in't: goe: hence
 With diligence. [*Exit.*

Pro. Awake, deere hart awake, thou hast slept well,
 Awake.

THE TEMPEST, I, 2, 301 SEQQ.

The above reading of the folio has been handled by the editors in a somewhat strange and violent manner. In the first line, Pope and almost all his followers have added *to* before a *Nymph*; this preposition is indeed taken from the later folios and, as will be shown, cannot be omitted, on account of the metre. Those editors who do not agree to its insertion transpose the words *Be subject* from the beginning of the second to the end of the first line. In the second line most editors have struck out *thine and*, partly in order to reduce the line to six feet, partly because they thought the word 'an interpolation of ignorance', as Steevens terms it. Dyce goes so far as to stigmatise the poor words, although contained in all the folios, as 'most ridiculous'. Such high words, I regret to say, are no arguments; this kind of criticism amounts to correcting the poet himself, if correcting it be, instead of his copyists and printers. In the fourth line Ritson and others have omitted *goe* before *hence*, and, in consequence, have been obliged to write *in it* instead of *in't*. After all these alterations it is no wonder that modern texts read very differently from what has been transmitted in the folio; in Dyce's third edition the passage stands thus: —

Go make thyself like to a nymph o' th' sea,
 Be subject to no sight but mine; invisible
 To every eyeball else. Go take this shape,
 And hither come in't: hence with diligence.

The last line is not exempt from the faults of weakness and lameness and it speaks greatly in favour of the old text that, the less it is altered, the better verses are obtained; there is indeed no occasion whatever to depart from it, except in the addition of the preposition *to* in the first line and in the arrangement of the lines, which would appear originally to have been this: —

Go, make thyself like to a nymph o' th' sea:
 Be subject to no sight but thine and mine,
 Invisible to every eyeball else.
 Go, take this shape and hither come in't: go hence
 With diligence. *[Exit Ariel.]*
 Awake, dear heart, awake! thou hast slept well;
 Awake!

I do not know whether this arrangement has been already given in some one or other of the innumerable editions of the poet or not; all I can say is that I have never met with it. Whether or not the second *go*, in the fourth line, is to be divided from the following words by a colon may be left to the reader's own judgment; it does not affect the arrangement proposed. With the words *Go, take this shape* Prospero, of course, gives Ariel the garment which is to render him invisible to everybody's eyes except his (*viz.* Ariel's) own and those of his master. (Robinson's *Epitome of Literature*, Philadelphia, March 15, 1879; Vol. III, 48.)

LIV.

My prime request,
Which I do last pronounce, is, O you wonder!
If you be maid or no?

THE TEMPEST, I, 2, 426 SEQQ.

Made in the fourth folio is an evident gloss; the sense is, 'If you be an (unmarried) mortal woman or a goddess?' Compare *The Birth of Merlin*, II, 2 (ed. Delius 33): —

Aur. It is Artesia, the royal Saxon princess.

Prince. A woman and no deity? no feign'd shape,
To mock the reason of admiring sense,
On whom a hope as low as mine may live,
Love, and enjoy, dear brother, may it not?

Compare also *Odys.* VI, 149 where Ulysses addresses Nausicaa in the following words: —

γούροῦμαί σε ἄρτεσσα· θεὸς ἢ τίς ἢ βροτός ἐοοί κ. τ. λ.



LV.

Be of comfort;
My father's of a better nature, sir,
Than he appears by speech: this is unwonted
Which now came from him.

THE TEMPEST, I, 2, 495 SEQQ.

This would imply, that Prospero generally made a less favourable impression by his speeches than by his actions, which, of course, is not what Miranda means to say. It is, on the contrary, only this one speech just uttered that shows him to disadvantage, and this speech, as Miranda assures Ferdinand, is unwonted. Read therefore: —

Than he appears *by*'s speech: &c.

In order to 'make assurance double sure', it may be added that *br's* occurs in John Taylor the Waterpoeet's pamphlet entitled *The Water-Cormorant his Complaint &c.* (London, 1622) at the end of the 'Satire on A Figure flinger, or a couzning cunning man': —

And though the marke of truth he neuer hits,
Yet still this Cormorant doth linc by's wits &c.
(Shakespeare-Jahrbuch VIII, 376).

LVI.

Gen. All three of them are desperate: their great guilt,
Like poison given to work a great time after,
Now 'gins to bite the spirits.

THE TEMPEST, III, 3, 104 SEQQ.

Mr P. A. Daniel corrects *their spirits*; compare however *A Warning for Fair Women* A. II, l. 1381 (Simpson, *The School of Shakspere* II, 322): —

The little babies in the mothers' arms
Have wept for those poor babies, seeing me,
That I by my murther have left fatherless.

In my humble opinion, this use of the article instead of the possessive pronoun is no corruption of the text, but a looseness of speech on the part of the author, which it is not the office of the critic to correct; all critics, however, know from their own experience how extremely difficult it is always to keep clear from errors and mistakes in distinguishing between the peculiarities and inaccuracies of a writer and the lapses of his transcribers and printers.

LVII.

Come, shadow, come, and take this shadow up,
 For 'tis thy rival. O thou senseless form,
 Thou shalt be worshipp'd, kiss'd, loved and adored!
 And were there sense in his idolatry,
 My substance should be statue in thy stead.

THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA, IV, 4, 202 SEQQ.

The word *statue* cannot be right, and the attempts that have been made to amend it (Hannmer conjectured *sainted*, and Warburton *statued*) are still less satisfactory. I think we should read *shadow*, on which word Julia is evidently playing. *Shadow*, in Shakespeare, is usually opposed to *substance*, so that also in the above line it seems to be almost necessitated by the preceding *substance*. This conviction is still strengthened when we recall the verses in A. IV, Sc. 2, where Proteus asks for Silvia's picture and Silvia promises to send it: —

Pro. Madam, if your heart be so obdurate
 Vouchsafe me yet your picture for my love,
 The picture that is hanging in your chamber;
 To that I'll speak, to that I'll sigh and weep:
 For since the substance of your perfect self
 Is else devoted, I am but a shadow;
 And to your shadow will I make true love.

Jul. [*Aside*] If 'twere a substance, you would, sure,
 deceive it,
 And make it but a shadow, as I am.

Sil. I am very loath to be your idol, sir;
 But since your falsehood shall become you well
 To worship shadows and adore false shapes,
 Send to me in the morning and I'll send it:
 And so, good rest.

Compare also: —

Love like a shadow flies, when substance love pursues.

THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR, II, 2.

He takes false shadows for true substances.

TITUS ANDRONICUS, III, 2.

That same is Blanch, [sole] daughter to the king

The substance of the shadow that you saw.

FAIR EM ED. DELIUS, 8. --- SIMPSON, THE SCHOOL
OF SHAKSPEARE, II, 416.

It need scarcely be remarked that *shadowe*, in the last-quoted passage, stands for the picture of Lady Blanch. (Robinson's Epitome of Literature, March 15, 1879; Vol. III, 48.)

LVIII.

And the quaint mazes in the wanton green

For lack of tread are undistinguishable:

The human mortals want their winter cheer;

No night is now with hymn or carol blest:

Therefore the moon, &c.

A MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM, II, 1, 99 SEQQ.

There is not much less confusion in the order of these lines than in the altered seasons themselves. The arrangement, proposed by Dr Johnson, however, contains no improvement commensurate with its violence. I think an easier way of healing the corruption may be found. The lines: —

The human mortals want their winter cheer;

No night is now with hymn or carol blest,

should be placed after: —

Fall in the fresh lap of the crimson rose.

Theobald's ingenious suggestion *cheer* instead of *here*, although withdrawn by its author, has been rightly taken up by Dyce; indeed, we cannot do without it. The sense is, 'we see the seasons alter; we have "snow in the lap of June" and summer in winter, so that we can enjoy neither summer nor winter; the mortals are deprived of their usual winter enjoyments, and no night is blessed with Christmas hymns or carols.' (The Athenæum, Oct. 26, 1867, 537.)

LIX.

Can you not hate me, as I know you do,
But you must join in souls to mock me too?

A MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM, III, 2, 149 SEQ.

The second line, although Dyce is silent about it, is certainly corrupt. Hanmer conjectured *in flouts*; Mason, *in soul*; Tyrwhitt, *ill souls*; Warburton, *but must join insolents*. According to my conviction Shakespeare wrote: —

But you must join in *launts* to mock me too?

The usual abbreviation 'taunts', if the stroke were obliterated, or altogether left out, could be easily misread for 'fouls'. (The Athenæum, Oct. 26, 1867, 537.)

LX.

Merry and tragical! tedious and brief!

That is hot ice and wondrous strange snow.

A MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM, V, 1, 58 SEQ.

Hanmer proposed *and wondrous scorching snow*; Warburton, *a wondrous strange shew*; Upton, and Capell, *and wondrous strange black snow*; Mason, *and wondrous strong snow*; Collier,

and Grant White (Shakespeare's Scholar 220), *and wondrous seething snow*; Staunton, *and wondrous swarthy snow*; Nicholson, *and wondrous staining snow*. The Editors of the Globe Edition have prefixed their well-known obelus to the line. There can be no doubt that the epithet must refer to the colour, and not to the temperature, of the snow; for as ice is the symbol and quintessence of coldness, so is snow of whiteness and purity. Compare, e. g., Psalm 51, 7: Purge me with hyssop and I shall be clean, wash me and I shall be whiter than snow. Hamlet, III, 1, 140: be thou as chaste as ice, as pure as snow. Hamlet, III, 3, 46: —

Is there not rain enough in the sweet heavens
To wash it white as snow?

The incongruity, with the ice, therefore, lies in the temperature; with the snow, in the colour. In so far, Staunton's conjecture *swarthy* highly recommends itself; it is, indeed, the only one that is acceptable among those that have been published hitherto. I imagine, however, that Shakespeare wrote: —

That is, hot ice and wondrous *sable* snow.

To a transcriber or compositor of Shakespeare's works, the words *wondrous strange*, from their frequent occurrence, were likely to present themselves even when uncalled for. (The Athenæum, Oct. 26, 1867, 537.)

LXI.

Tongue, lose thy light;

Moon, take thy flight;

Now die, die, die, die, die. [*Exit Moonshine.*]

A MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM, V, 1, 309.

This nonsense can never have come from Shakespeare's pen. The word *tongue* is entirely out of place here and

has evidently crept in from Thisbe's next speech (the antistrophe): —

Tongue, not a word:

Come, trusty sword;

Come, blade, my breast imbrue.

Mr Halliwell-Phillipps has conjectured *sun* for *tongue*; but Pyramus has nothing to do with the sun, and such an address to sun and moon would be too truly pathetic in his mouth. Besides, Pyramus does not address the moon, but rather Moonshine and his Dog; and *tongue*, in my opinion, is nothing but a mistake for *dog*. This granted, we have only to transpose the words *Dog* and *Moon*, and the natural flow of thoughts and words seems fully restored: —

Moon, lose thy light,

Dog, take thy flight,

Now die, die, die, die, die. [*Exit Moonshine.*
(The Athenæum, Oct. 26, 1867, 537).

LXII.

My wind cooling my broth

Would blow me to an ague, when I thought

What harm a wind too great at sea might do.

THE MERCHANT OF VENICE, I, I, 22 SEQQ.

Wind is here understood by the commentators and translators to mean 'breath'. The repetition of the word, however, first in this unusual and immediately after in its customary sense, must 'give us pause'; since no pun is intended; it seems natural, to take the word in both places in the same sense. Besides, nobody is able to 'blow himself to an ague by his own proper breath; on the contrary, that which produces an

ague must come from somewhere else, it must be a wind, in the ordinary sense of the word, and not a breath. The pronoun 'my' does not subvert this explanation; it is used colloquially and redundantly in the same manner as 'me' or 'your'. Thus, e. g., King John I, 1, 189 seqq.: —

Now your traveller,

He and his toothpick at my worship's mess;

And when my knightly stomach is suffic'd,

Why then I suck my teeth, and catechize

My picked man of countries.

Or Ben Jonson, Volpone, IV, 1: —

Read Contarene, took me a house,

Dealt with my Jews to furnish it with moveables &c.

Abbott, Shakespearian Grammar 220 seq., has omitted to mention this redundant use of 'my'. (Shakespeare - Jahrbuch XI, 275.)

LXIII.

How like a fawning publican he looks.

THE MERCHANT OF VENICE, I, 3, 42.

Messrs Clark and Wright in their annotated edition of this play take exception to the above line. "A 'fawning publican'", they say, 'seems an odd combination. The Publicani or farmers of taxes under the Roman government were much more likely to treat the Jews with insolence than servility. Shakespeare, perhaps, only remembered that in the Gospels "publicans and sinners" are mentioned together as objects of the hatred and contempt of the Pharisees.' — The learned editors have overlooked that the poet evidently alludes to St. Luke 18, 10—14, where the publican fawns — not indeed on men, but — in Shylock's opinion — on God. Such a

prostration before God, proceeding from a humility which is a characteristic of Christianity rather than of Judaism does not enter into Shylock's soul. Shylock lends a deaf ear to Portia's glorious panegyric of mercy; he will neither show, nor accept mercy. He 'stays on his bond' not only in his relations to his fellow-men, but also in his relations to his Creator. 'What judgment shall I dread, doing no wrong?' and 'My deeds upon my head!' he exclaims, in the true spirit of Judaism. Marlowe's Barabas (A. I) speaks in the very same key: —

The man that dealeth righteously shall live;
And which of you can charge me otherwise?

But Shylock is not only incapable of sympathizing with the publican that prostrates himself in the dust and cries for mercy, he is even averse to what he deems an abject behaviour; he hates such a man and brands his humility as fawning. (Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XI, 276.)

LXIV.

Sly. Signior Antonio, many a time and oft
In the Rialto you have rated me
About my moneys and my usances.

THE MERCHANT OF VENICE, I, 3, 107 SEQQ.

Roger Wilbraham (An Attempt at a Glossary of Some Words used in Cheshire, London, 1836, under 'Many a time and oft') says: 'A common expression and means, frequently. — — With which colloquial expression, though common through all England, Mr. Kean, the actor in the part of Shylock, being unacquainted, always spoke the passage, by making a pause in the middle of it, thus: "Many a time — and oft on the

Rialto", without having any authority from the text of Shakespeare for so doing.' Compare also Forby, Vocabulary of East Anglia s. v. Many-a-time-and-often: 'a pleonasm or rather tautology, sufficiently ridiculous, but in very familiar use.'

LXV.

The young gentleman, — — is indeed deceased, or, as you would say in plain terms, gone to heaven.

THE MERCHANT OF VENICE, II, 2, 64 SEQU.

Launcelot Gobbo delights in saying things by contraries; he advises his father to 'turn down indirectly to the Jew's house' and assures Bassanio that the suit is 'impertinent' to himself. May he not be speaking here in the same style, so much the more so as the 'plain term' in question is *to go to hell* rather than *to go to heaven*? He does not, however, pronounce the ominous word, but after some hesitation corrects himself. The actor therefore should make a significant pause before 'heaven', and we should write, *or, as you would say in plain terms, gone to — heaven*. A similar humorous innuendo is contained in the well-known poem of Burns 'Duncan Gray', St. 3: —

Shall I, like a fool, quoth he,

For a haughty hizzie die?

She may gae to — France for me!

Ha, ha, the wooing o't.

I quote from Allan Cunningham's edition (London, 1842, in 1 vol., 450). In the second line, I think, we should write *die* for *die*. (Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XI, 277 seq.)

LXVI.

How doth that royal merchant, good Antonio?

THE MERCHANT OF VENICE, III, 2, 242.

The distinguishing title here given to Antonio is repeated in IV, 1, 29: — Enow to press a royal merchant down. It is by no means to be considered as a mere *epitheton ornans*, by which the poet wishes to define the social position and princely magnanimity of Antonio, but it is also a genuine *terminus technicus* for a wholesale merchant or rather for what was formerly called a merchant adventurer. This is shown by a passage in Thomas Powell's pamphlet *Tom of all Trades; or, The plaine Pathway to Preferment* (1631), which is reprinted in Mr Furnivall's edition of *Tell-Trothes New-Yeaes Gift* (Publications of the New Shakspeare Society, Ser. VI, No. 2, 164 seq.). 'I admit', says Thomas Powell, 'the Merchant Royall that comes to his Profession by travaile and Factory, full fraught, and free adventure, to be a profession worthy the seeking. But not the hedge-creeper, that goes to seeke custome from shop to shop with a Cryll under his arme, That leapes from his Shop-boord to the Exchange, and after he is fame-falne and credit crackt in two or three other professions, shall wrigle into this and that when he comes upon the Exchange, instead of enquiring after such a good ship, spends the whole houre in disputing, whether is the more profitable house-keeping, either with powder Beefe, and brewes, or with fresh Beefe and Porridge; though (God wot) the blacke Pot at home be guilty of neyther: And so he departs when the Bell rings, and his guts rumble, both to one tune and the same purpose. The Merchant Royall might grow prosperous, were it not for such poore patching interloping Lapwings that have an adventure of two Chaldron of Coles at New-castle; As much oyle in the Greenland fishing

as will serve two Coblers for the whole yeare ensuing. And an other at Rowsie [i. e. Russia], for as many Fox-skins as will furre his Longlane gowne, when he is called to the Livorie.' (Anglia, herausgegeben von Wülcker und Trautmann I, 340.)

 LXVII.

Bear your body more seeming, Audrey.

AS YOU LIKE IT, V, 4, 72.

In support of Mr P. A. Daniel's admirable emendation *more swimming*, the following passages may be added to those that have been quoted by Mr Daniel himself. Chapman, The Ball, A. II (The Works of Geo. Chapman: Plays ed. R. H. Shepherd, 494): Carry your body in the swimming fashion. — Ben Jonson, Epigrams No. LXXXII (Works, in 1 vol., London 1853, 671): —

Suriy's old whore in her new silks doth swim:

He cast, yet keeps her well! No; she keeps him.

From among modern writers the distinguished American poet William Cullen Bryant may be cited as giving proof of the sense in which the phrase is understood. In his poem 'Spring in Town' he says: —

No swimming Juno gait, of languor born,

Is theirs, but a light step of freest grace,

Light as Camilla's o'er the unbent corn.

These quotations, I think, are sufficient to remove all doubts and to clear the way for the admittance of Mr Daniel's ingenious correction into the text, so much the more as the phrase 'to bear oneself or one's body seeming' can hardly be supported by a single parallel passage. (Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XI, 284.)

LXVIII.

As Stephen Sly and old John Naps of Greece.

THE TAMING OF THE SHREW, INDUCTION, II, 95.

For the private amusement of himself and friends the poet has introduced in this Induction allusions to some well-known inns and boon companions of his own county; recollections, no doubt, of the haunts and acquaintances of his youth. Such, probably, were old Sly and his son of Burton (or Barton)-on-Heath, if they should not be meant for Edmund Lambert and his son John (cf. Elze, William Shakespeare, 64 and 80); such also Marian Hacket, the fat ale-wife of Wincot, i. e. Wilmecote, which, according to Staunton's note *ad loc.*, is to this day popularly pronounced Wincot. With these I do not hesitate to couple *old John Naps of Greece*; Greece being a palpable corruption, which is neither remedied by Blackstone and Hammer's *old John Naps o' th' Green*, nor by Mr Halliwell-Phillipps's *old John Naps of Greys* or of *Greete*, which latter, Mr Halliwell-Phillipps says, was a place situated between Stratford and Gloucester. On the map of Warwickshire I find a place called Cleeve Priory, on the Avon, a few miles below Stratford. Shakespeareans who are acquainted from personal knowledge with the topography of Warwickshire, which I am sorry to say I am not, can decide whether this be a place likely to have been the residence of old John Naps; if so, I should propose to read: —

As Stephen Sly and old John Naps of *Cleeve*.

This conjecture, I think, is strengthened by our poet's allusion in *Romeo and Juliet*, II, 4, 83 seq., to 'bitter-sweetings', a kind of apple which was, and is to this day, 'grown especially at Cleeve and Littleton' and is still used as a sauce, in complete accordance with Mercutio's words in the passage cited. See John R. Wise, *Shakspeare: His Birth-*

place and its Neighbourhood (London, 1861) 97. (The Athenæum, Jan. 18, 1868, 95. Reply by Mr Halliwell-Phillipps ib. Jan. 25, 1868, 133. — Shakespeare's dramatische Werke nach der Uebersetzung von Schlegel und Tieck, herausgegeben von der Deutschen Shakespeare-Gesellschaft VII, 120.)

 LXXIX.

To suck the sweets of sweet philosophy.

THE TAMING OF THE SHREW, I, 1, 28.

S. Walker (Crit. Exam. I, 289) has rightly classed this line among that species of corruption which he calls 'substitution of words', where a particular word is substituted for another 'which stands near it in the context, more especially if there happens to be some resemblance between the two'; in fact, it is what in Germany is called a diplography, i. e. a faulty repetition of the same or a similar word (see Nos. XXII and XXX). Walker, however, has left the verse without correction, whilst an anonymous conjecturer, according to the Cambridge Edition, proposes *fair philosophy*. The context, I think, clearly shows the true reading to be: —

To suck the sweets of *Greek* philosophy.

(The Athenæum, Jan. 18, 1868 p. 95).

 LXX.

O yes, I saw sweet beauty in her face,

Such as the daughter of Agenor had.

THE TAMING OF THE SHREW, I, 1, 172 SEQ.

In order to restore the rhyme Mr Collier's so-called manuscript-corrector has substituted *of Agenor's race* for *of Agenor had*.

Dyce, however, both in his *Strictures on Mr Collier's New Edition of Shakespeare*, 72, and in his second edition of *Shakespeare's Works*, has shown that by this alteration the meaning is destroyed and the grammar violated. Should the line have rhymed originally, — and I am inclined to this belief, — another, though still bolder, conjecture might serve the purpose: —

O yes, I saw her *in sweet beauty clad*,
Such as the daughter of Agenor had.

LXXI.

Luc. Fiddler, forbear; you grow too forward, sir:
Have you so soon forgot the entertainment
Her sister Katharine welcomed you withal?

Hor. But, wrangling pedant, this is
The patroness of heavenly harmony: &c.

THE TAMING OF THE SHREW, III, 1, 1 SEQQ.

To complete the fourth line is no very difficult task, and it has been performed by almost all editors; their conjectures, however, are mere guesses and do not give us the least explanation as to how the mutilation may have originated. Not to speak of Theobald's and Hamner's conjectures, nothing less can be said of Mr Collier's *I avouch this is* or of W. N. Lettson's *This is a Cecilia*. The poorest expedient seems to me S. Walker's arrangement (*Versification*, 85), which proves that in criticism, as well as in poetry, even Homer may sometimes take a nap. Any attempt to heal this gap which should lay claim to something better than an 'airy nothing' ought of itself to indicate the way in which the beginning of the line became lost; for, in my opinion, the loss took place at the

beginning, and not in the body, or at the end, of the line. I imagine that Shakespeare wrote: —

Her sister — tut! But, wrangling pedant, this is &c.

The copyist or compositor omitted the first two words because he had just written them or set them up in the same place in the preceding line, and the third was overlooked through its similarity to the following *but*. The copyist or compositor catching this *but*, fancied that he had already written or set up the three preceding words. (The Athenæum, Jan. 18, 1868, p. 95).

LXXII.

Pet. Come, where be these gallants? Who's at home?

Bap. You're welcome, sir.

Pet. And yet I come not well.

Bap. And yet you halt not.

Tra. Not so, well apparell'd

As I wish you were.

Pet. Were it better, I should rush in thus.

But where is Kate? Where is my lovely bride?

How does my father? — Gentles, methinks you frown.

THE TAMING OF THE SHREW, III, 2, 89 SEQQ.

The arrangement and disposition of this passage is, no doubt, corrupt. It is an unfit remark in Petruchio's own mouth that he does not come well, nor does it harmonize with his subsequent question — 'And wherefore gaze this goodly company?' On the contrary he would have the company believe that he comes quite well as he comes, and that he gives no occasion for staring at him. This difficulty is, indeed, removed by the ingenious conjecture of Capell; there are, however, others still remaining. I do not think it likely that

Tranio should join in the conversation at its very beginning; moreover, it is not his business to express a wish about Petruchio's apparel. The words 'Not so well apparell'd as I wish you were' evidently belong to Baptista; and in the old piece, the corresponding words ('But say, why art thou thus basely attired?') are in fact spoken by the father of the bride. In so far I agree with W. N. Lettsom's arrangement, apud Walker, Crit. Exam. III, 68. For the emendation of the following verse, 'Were it better, I should rush in thus', a number of conjectures have been offered. Its supposed corruption, however, merely arises from a misunderstanding, or rather misconstruction. All the editors, whom I have been able to collate, refer these words to the preceding lines; their meaning, according to Dyce, being, 'Were my apparel better than it is, I should yet rush in thus.' But the pointing of the folio which has a colon after 'thus' shows that the line is to be connected with the following verses; and the position of 'thus' at the end of the line confirms this construction. Petruchio, in answer to Baptista's reproaches, here imitates an amorous coxcomb and asks if it were better to have come in after *this* manner, and with *these* questions. With the words, 'Gentles, methinks you frown', he resumes his own manner and tone. Only on the stage can the truth of this interpretation be made fully apparent. The passage should accordingly be printed: —

Pet. Come, where be these gallants? Who 's at home?

Bap. You're welcome, sir; and yet you come not well.

Pet. And yet I halt not.

Bap. Not so apparell'd as I wish you were.

Pet. Were it better I should rush in thus? —

[Imitating a coxcomb.

But where is Kate? Where is my lovely bride?

How does my father? (*Resuming his own manner again.*)

Gentles, methinks you frown.

In the first line, S. Walker (*Crit. Exam.* II, 144) proposes to read *Come, come*; it may, however, as well begin with what is called a monosyllabic foot. In the correction of the fourth line W. N. Lettsom has led the way by expunging *will* before *apparell'd*; he also substitutes *Nor* for *Not*, whereas in my arrangement the original reading is retained. (*The Athenæum*, Jan. 18, 1868, 95).

LXXIII.

Welcome: one mess is like to be your cheer.

Come, sir; we will better it in Pisa.

THE TAMING OF THE SHREW, IV, 4, 70 SEQ.

Capell's alteration has been conclusively refuted by Dyce. The metre of the second line might be thus restored: —

Come, sir; we *soon* will better it in Pisa.

Or, if a verse of four feet should be thought admissible, *we will* may be contracted: —

Come, sir; *we'll* better it in Pisa.

(*The Athenæum*, Jan. 18, 1868, 95).

LXXIV.

I frown the while, and perchance wind up my watch, or play with my some rich jewel.

TWELFTH NIGHT, II, 5, 65 SEQ.

I regret that I cannot agree with Mr P. A. Daniel's interpretation of this passage (*Notes and Conjectural Emendations*, 43). For, if in fact persons of rank, apart from collars of knighthood, and similar badges of honour, wore jewels

suspended from the neck (of which I am not certain), yet these jewels could hardly serve as playthings. In my opinion the poet rather has in view a jewel hanging from the watch, or worn in a ring. Compare, e. g., *The Womanhater* IV, 2 (Dodsley ed. Hazlitt IV, 358): —

Be full of bounty; velvets to furnish a gown, silks
For petticoats and foreparts, shag for lining;
Forget not some pretty jewel to fasten, after
Some little compliment.

Or Jeronimo, (Dodsley ed. Hazlitt IV, 358): —

Let his protestations be
Fashioned with rich jewels.

I should prefer therefore to read *with some rich jewel*, although the ingenious emendation proposed by Mr Daniel might just as well be understood in the sense indicated by me. The pointing by which the Cambridge Editors endeavour to uphold the reading of the folio is too artificial to be taken for Shakespeare's own punctuation.

LXXV.

Here's a stay
That shakes the rotten carcass of old Death
Out of his rags.

KING JOHN II, I, 455 SEQ.

This is the reading of the folio, of which W. N. Lettsom has justly remarked, that '*stay* is perhaps the last word that could have come from Shakespeare.' Johnson has conjectured *flaw* which S. Walker (*Crit. Exam.* II, 294) thinks 'is indisputably right'; it bears, however, too little resemblance to the old reading, and, besides, the idea of a gust of wind seems to be

foreign to the context. The same objections lie against Mr Spedding's conjectures of *storm* and *story*. Beckett and Singer propose *sqv* which is far too weak in the mouth of the Bastard. I think we should read, — *Here's a bray*. The Heralds both of the besiegers and the besieged play a conspicuous part in this scene and have just opened the parley with the blowing of their trumpets; King Philip says (II, 1, 204 seq.): —

You loving men of Angiers, Arthur's subjects,
Our trumpet call'd you to this gentle parle.

Under such circumstances the citizen of Angiers may be said not inappropriately to 'bray out' his defiance to the kings like a 'harsh-resounding' trumpet (see K. Richard II, I, 3, 135: With harsh-resounding trumpets' dreadful bray) and, in the Bastard's language, by such a clang to shake 'the rotten carcass of old Death out of his rags.' Compare Hamlet, I, 4, 11 seq.: —

The kettledrum and trumpet thus bray out
The triumph of his pledge —

and Edward III, I, 2 (ed. Delius, 9): —

How much they will deride us in the North;
And in their vile, uncivil, skipping jigs,
Bray forth their conquest and our overthrow,
Even in the barren, bleak, and fruitless air.

See also Milton's English Poems, ed. R. C. Browne (London, 1873) I, 228 and 307. (The Athenaeum, June 22, 1867, 821. — Shakespeare's dramatische Werke nach der Uebersetzung von Schlegel und Tieck, herausgegeben von der Deutschen Shakespeare-Gesellschaft I, 235.)

LXXVI.

The grappling vigour and rough frown of war
Is cold in amity and painted peace.

KING JOHN, III, 1, 104 SEQ.

Hanmer reads *cool'd*; Capell, *clad*; Staunton proposes *coil'd*, and Mr Collier's corrected folio has *faint in peace*. Mr Collier's manuscript corrector, whoever he may have been, has rightly felt the want of symmetrical agreement between the two clauses of the second line, but the remedy by which he has meant to restore it, seems to be wrong. I rather incline to the belief that Shakespeare wrote: —

Is *scolding* amity and painted peace.

Constance reproaches King Philip with perjury, and denounces his warlike preparations as a sham; they are, she says, not more dreadful than amity that scolds a friend or peace which is painted to look like war. The required harmony of the sentence is thus very naturally recovered; and I need not dwell on the easy misapprehension by which the words *Is scolding*, particularly when spoken, can be transmuted into *Is cold in*. (The Athenæum, June 22, 1867, 821. Shakespeare's dramatische Werke nach der Uebersetzung von Schlegel und Tieck, herausgegeben von der Deutschen Shakespeare-Gesellschaft I, 238).

LXXVII.

First Excc. I hope your warrant will bear out the deed.
Hub. Uncleanly scruples! fear not you; look to 't.

KING JOHN, IV, 1, 6 SEQ.

According to Schmidt, Shakespeare-Lexicon s. v., *uncleanly* is used by Shakespeare not only in its literal, but also in a moral sense = indecent, unbecoming. This moral sense Schmidt

ascribes to the word in the following three passages, viz. *As You Like It*, III, 2, 49; *Othello*, III, 3, 138 seqq.; and the present line from *King John*. In the first-named passage Corin and Touchstone are talking of 'good manners at the court' as opposed to country manners. 'You told me', says Corin, 'you salute not at the court, but you kiss your hands; that courtesy would be uncleanly, if courtiers were shepherds.' Being asked for his reason, he adds, 'We are still handling our ewes, and their fells, you know, are greasy'. From the context it is evident that *uncleanly* is here used in its literal, not in its figurative, meaning; which latter is to be found only in the other two passages. But this does not remove the doubts that cling to those *Uncleanly scruples*, with which Hubert reproaches the executioner, for the executioner's scruples are cleanly and decent rather than otherwise; he endeavours to keep clean from responsibility. Grey conjectured *unmanly*, but I have little doubt that we should read: —

Uncleanly scruples! fear not you! look to't.

These scruples, says Hubert, do not besem a man of so low a station as you are. (*The Athenæum*, June 22, 1867, 821. — *Shakespeare's dramatische Werke nach der Uebersetzung von Schlegel und Tieck, herausgegeben von der Deutschen Shakespeare-Gesellschaft I, 242*).

LXXVIII.

When your head did but ache,
I knit my handkercher about your brows,
The best I had, a princess wrought it me,
And I did never ask it you again;

And with my hand at midnight held your head,
 And like the watchful minutes to the hour,
 Still and anon cheer'd up the heavy time,
 Saying, 'What lack you?' and 'Where lies your grief?'
 Or 'What good love may I perform for you?'

KING JOHN, IV, 1, 41 SEQQ.

Arthur clearly means to say, 'Just as the watchful minutes cheer up the long, slow hour, so did I cheer up the heavy time by my repeated, sympathizing questions.' It seems, therefore, that we should read: —

And, like the watchful minutes *do* the hour,
 Still and anon cheered up the heavy time.

That *like* was not unfrequently used in the sense of *as*, has been shown by S. Walker, Crit. Exam. II, 115 seqq. 'In provincial English', says Mr Earle (The Philology of the English Tongue, 214) '*like* is still now used as a conjunction: he behaved like a scoundrel would.' Compare Forster's Life of Dickens (I, 263, Tauchnitz Ed.): 'Nobody shall miss her like I shall.' Abbott's Shakespearian Grammar is silent about this use of the word, although instances in point occur in The Tempest, III, 3, 65 seq.: —

my fellow-ministers

Are like invulnerable —

and in A Midsummer-Night's Dream, IV, 1, 170 seq.: —

But, like in sickness, did I loathe this food;

But, as in health, come to my natural taste, &c.

The old editions, it is true, read *like a sickness*, but this evident mistake was corrected by Farmer and all subsequent editors have adopted his correction. Compare also the passage from Hugh Holland quoted farther on (No. XCII): —

though my braines Apollo warmes;

Where, like in Jove's, Minerva keeps a coile.

(Notes and Queries, Feb. 7, 1874, 116. — Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XI, 284 seq.).

LXXIX.

If what in rest you have, in right you hold &c.

KING JOHN, IV, 2, 55.

Steevens conjectured *in wrest*; Jackson, *int' rest*; an anonymous scholar, *in rent*; Staunton, *If what in rest you have, not right you hold*. King John has nothing *in rest*, but, on the contrary, every thing in unrest; he is full of fears and has to contend with enemies both abroad and at home. Pandulph very justly says (III, 4, 131 seqq.): —

It cannot be

That, whiles warm life plays in that infant's veins,

The misplaced John should entertain an hour,

One minute, nay, one quiet breath of rest.

To tell the king, that he has the kingdom *in wrest* would ill become the speaker, even if such an abbreviation for *in your wrest* or *in your grasp*, were Shakespearean, of which I do not feel sure. These difficulties, I think, might be avoided by reading: —

If what in *trust* you have, by right you hold.

Government is entrusted to the king; he holds it for the benefit of his country and subjects. This is by no means a modern sentiment or foreign to Shakespeare's time. Holinshed puts almost the very same words into the mouth of the Archbishop of Canterbury at the coronation of King John; 'a man', he makes him say of the king, 'I doubt not

that for his owne part will apply his whole indeavour, studie and thought vnto that onelie end, which he shall perceiue to be most profitable for the commonwealth, as knowing himself to be borne not to serue his owne turne, but for to profit his countrie and to seeke for the generall benefit of us that are his subjects.' In Richard II, IV, 1, 126, the king is characterized by the Bishop of Carlisle as God's 'captain, steward, deputy-elect' and in III, 3, 78, Richard himself says: —

If we be not, show us the hand of God

That hath dismiss'd us from our stewardship.

(Shakespeare's dramatische Werke nach der Uebersetzung von Schlegel und Tieck, herausgegeben von der Deutschen Shakespeare-Gesellschaft I, 243 seq. — Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XI, 285 seq.).

LXXX.

For I do see the cruel pangs of death

Right in thine eye.

KING JOHN, V, 4, 59 SEQ.

Right in thine eye certainly gives a sense, but so weak and poor a sense that it is beneath Shakespeare. It can neither be supported by Coriolanus, III, 3, 70: —

Within thine eyes sat twenty thousand deaths,
nor by Byron, *The Island*, I, 4: —

Full in thine eyes is waved the glittering blade.

Right, in our passage, is merely an expletive. Hammer and Warburton therefore conjectured *Pight in thine eye* (*eyes*); Capell, *Fight in thine eye*; Mr Collier's so-called manuscript corrector, *Bright in thine eye*; Brae, *Riot in thine eye*. This last suggestion has been cited by Dr Ingleby (Shakespeare

Hermeneutics, or The Still Lion, London, 1875, 116) with 'unqualified satisfaction'. Mr Collier's conjecture, although approved by Singer and Knight, has been incontrovertibly refuted by Dyce *ad loc.* I think the compositor anticipated *right* from the following line ('that intends old right') and am convinced that the true reading is: —

For I do see the cruel pangs of death

Writhing thine eye.

(The Athenæum, June 22, 1867, 821. — Shakespeare's dramatische Werke nach der Uebersetzung von Schlegel und Tieck, herausgegeben von der Deutschen Shakespeare-Gesellschaft, 2. Aufl., I, 247. The first edition I, 247, has the misprint *Whithin* for *Writhing*.)

LXXXI.

Enter BASTARD *and* HUBERT, *seuerally*.

Hub. Whose there? Speake hoa, speake quickly,
or I shoote.

Bast. A Friend. What art thou?

Hub. Of the part of England.

Bast. Whether doest thou go?

Hub. What's that to thee?

Why may not I demand of thine affaires,

As well as thou of mine?

Bast. Hubert, I thinke.

Hub. Thou hast a perfect thought.

KING JOHN, V. 6, 1 SEQQ.

This is the reading of the folio and it need not be pointed out that, as far as the distribution of the speeches is concerned, it is a perfect tangle. Attempts at emendation have

been made by W. W. Lloyd, Dyce (3d Ed. V, 98), and Mr H. H. Vaughan (New Readings and New Renderings of Shakespeare's Tragedies, London, 1878, I, 84 seq.). Dyce differs from the folio only in the following lines: —

Hub. What's that to thee?

Bast. Why may not I demand

Of thine affairs, as well as thou of mine?

Hubert I think.

He adopts, he says, as absolutely necessary, this portion of the new distribution of the speeches at the commencement of this scene which was recommended to him by W. W. Lloyd. Mr Vaughan proposes the following arrangement: —

Hub. Who's there? Speak ho! speak quickly, or I
shoot.

Bast. A friend: what art thou?

Hub. Of the part of England.

Whither dost thou go?

Bast. What is that to thee?

Hub. 'What's that to thee?' — Why may not I
demand

Of thine affairs — as well as thou of mine?

Bast. Hubert, I think.

Hub. Thou hast a perfect thought.

Thus, Mr Vaughan says, the metre becomes perfect, whereas, according to him, the metrical defect is not remedied by Dyce's arrangement. In my opinion both Dyce's and Mr Vaughan's alterations are insufficient and do not improve the text; of Mr Lloyd's arrangement, as it is not contained in his *Critical Essays on the Plays of Shakespeare* (London 1875), I know nothing except what has been imparted by Dyce. If we bear in mind that throughout the play the Bastard is hot-headed, aggressive and over-bearing, whereas

Hubert is of a sedate temperament and generally stands on his defence, it will seem quite natural that it is not the latter, but the former, who opens the dialogue with the impetuous question: Who's there? Speak, ho!, to which he immediately adds a threat. It speaks greatly in favour of this supposition that in the stage-direction the name of the Bastard is placed first. I feel therefore convinced that the verses should be distributed as follows: —

Bast. Who's there? Speak, ho! speak quickly, or I

Hub. A friend. [shoot.

Bast. What art thou?

Hub. Of the part of England. —

Whither dost thou go?

Bast. What's that to thee?

Hub. Why may not I demand

Of thine affairs as well as thou of mine?

Bast. Hubert, I think.

Hub. Thou hast a perfect thought.

(Shakespeare's dramatische Werke nach der Uebersetzung von Schlegel und Tieck, herausgegeben durch die Deutsche Shakespeare-Gesellschaft, I, 247. — The Athenæum, June 22, 1867.)

LXXXII.

Let it be so: and you, my noble prince,
With other princes that may best be spared,
Shall wait upon your father's funeral.

KING JOHN, V, 7, 96 SEQQ.

S. Walker (Crit. Exam. I, 293) believes the word *princes* to be a corruption, the transcriber's or compositor's eye having been caught by the word *prince* in the preceding line. Dyce and

the Cambridge Editors concur in this opinion, without, however, making any attempt at restoring the passage. The compositor, in my opinion, by mistake repeated a wrong word from the preceding verse; instead of *princes* he ought to have repeated *nobles*, for Shakespeare in all probability wrote: —

With other *nobles* that may best be spared.

(The Athenæum, June 22, 1867, 821. — Shakespeare's dramatische Werke nach der Uebersetzung von Schlegel und Tieck, herausgegeben von der Deutschen Shakespeare-Gesellschaft, I, 248.)

LXXXIII.

Enter Will Kemp.

ROMEO AND JULIET, IV, 5 (QB).

The account of Will Kemp's life and doings as given by Dyce in the Introduction to 'Kemp's Nine Daies Wonder' (printed for the Camden Society, 1840), singular though it be, has yet been far surpassed by the wild hypotheses concerning it advanced by the late R. Simpson (The School of Shakspeare, II, 373 seq.). Simpson is the only critic, as far as I am aware, who pretends to a knowledge of Kemp's whereabouts before 1587. This knowledge he derives from the pseudo-Shakespearean comedy of 'Fair Em' to which he imparts a symbolical meaning and which he imagines to refer to events in the history of the stage. William the Conqueror, the hero of that comedy, according to Simpson, is no other than William Kemp, who, he fancies, went to Denmark in 1586, at the head of a company of actors, in order to marry the princess Blanch, that is, in order to make himself the master of the Danish stage.' 'But on his

arrival there', continues Simpson, 'he was more struck with the chances of another career, and very soon eloped to Saxony, to turn his histrionic talents to more account there.' This fact, Simpson fancies, was shadowed forth by the change that takes place in the sentiments of William the Conqueror. 'Mounteney and Valingford', our critic goes on to say, 'are two of his company whom he would have taken with him, but who preferred to stay behind, and contend for the prize of the Manchester stage, which Lord Strange's players were then bringing into repute.' The second part of the plot carries on the history of this Manchester contention. 'The windmill, with its clapper and its grist, is the type of the theatre; the wind is either the encouraging breath of the audience, or the voice of the actors, the clapper the applause, and the grist the gains. The miller's daughter is the prize; he who wins her bears the bell as play-wright.' — As this second part of Simpson's explanation has nothing to do with Will Kemp, I dismiss it with the question, what the verdict of English critics might have been, had a German started such a theory.

There is not a single argument to support Kemp's supposed journey to Denmark and Saxony; nay such a journey is utterly improbable. Putting aside for the moment Kemp's 'Dutiful Inuective' (1587) of which I shall speak more at large hereafter, we find Kemp first mentioned in 1589, if we take it for granted that Nash's undated tract 'An Almond for a Parrot' which is inscribed to William Kemp was published in this year. In the dedication Kemp is complimented as the 'vice-gerent generall to the Ghost of Dicke Tarlton'; and in Heywood's 'Apologie for Actors' (43) we are likewise told that Kemp succeeded Tarlton, who died in September, 1588, 'as wel in the favour of her majesty, as in the opinion and good

thoughts of the generall audience.' The question, therefore, arises whether it is likely that Kemp, if he had really proceeded in 1586 to Denmark and thence to Saxony, could have been back again in England as early as the end of 1588 or the beginning of 1589, nay, if he really were the author of the 'Dutiful Inuective' which appeared in 1587, his stay in foreign parts must dwindle down to less than a twelvemonth. But travelling in those days was no such easy pastime as it is now-a-days, and certainly we must allow Kemp some time both in Denmark and Germany for the exercise of his profession. Besides, Kemp in 1588, in all probability, was a very young man, for he himself tells us that in 1599 when performing his famous morris-dance from London to Norwich, he 'judged his heart cork and his heels feathers, so that he thought he could fly to Rome or at least hop to Rome, as the old proverb is, with a mortar on his head.' We cannot possibly believe him to have been a man advanced in years in 1599, else he would certainly not have been able to undergo the fatigues of a feat so unheard of and never surpassed. Supposing then that he was about thirty-five years old when dancing to Norwich, he would in 1586 have numbered little more than twenty years, an age at which we can hardly believe him to have gone abroad at the head of a company of players. Moreover it is highly probable that from 1589 to 1593 Kemp belonged to Edward Alleyn's company, for his 'Applauded Merrimentes of the Men of Gotcham' are contained in the most pleasant and merry Comedy 'A Knacke to knowe a Knaue', which was published in 1594 and acted in 1592 by Alleyn's company; this, as Dyce justly remarks, would scarcely have been the case, had not Kemp been a member of the company and himself performed a part in his Applauded Merrimentes. Thus

far every one will be glad to side with so distinguished a critic as Dyce; but when directly afterwards he ridicules Ritson for having inserted in the catalogue of Kemp's 'Works', the 'Applauded Merrimentes', nobody, it is true, will be ready to raise that fragment of buffoonery, — even supposing it to have been amplified by improvisation, — to the dignity of a 'Work', but nobody, on the other hand, I think, will be justified in denying, with Dyce, that Kemp was its author. On the contrary, this fact is supported by a testimony quoted by Dyce himself (XXV), viz. a passage in Nash's 'Strange Newes, Of the intercepting certaine Letters' (1592) where Nash advises Gabriel Harvey to be on his guard lest Will Kemp should choose him one of these days for the subject of one of his 'Merrimentes'.*

Beside the 'Applauded Merrimentes' three jigs are entered in the Stationers' Registers (1591 and 1595) as 'Kemp's Jig' or 'Kemp's New Jig'. According to Dyce these jigs were ascribed to Kemp on no other ground than because, by his consummate skill, he had succeeded in rendering them popular. His reasons for this assertion are twofold. First, he alleges that Kemp himself speaks of his *Nine Daies' Wonder* (1600) as the first pamphlet published by him, which, according to Dyce, would be an untruth if he had published not only the 'Applauded Merrimentes' but also three jigs before that time; for it would be a poor argument, Dyce adds, to distinguish between the jigs and the *Nine Daies' Wonder*, on the ground that the former were not pamphlets. I do not see why this argument is to be rejected as a poor one; jigs were a species of plays, and written in verse, as Dyce himself admits, whereas the *Nine Daies' Wonder* is written

* Mr Collier, *H. E. Dr. P.*, III, 33, erroneously cites the passage in question as taken from Nash's *Apologie for Piewe Penitence* (1593).

in prose as other pamphlets are. Besides, are we quite sure that Kemp's jigs were given to the world by the author himself, as we know his *Nine Daies Wonder* was? May not their publication have been effected in the same manner in which so many Elizabethan plays were published, without the consent, nay, even without the knowledge of the authors? Granting this, it certainly would have been an unimpeachable statement, for Kemp to style the *Nine Daies Wonder* 'the first pamphlet that ever Will Kemp offred to the Presse'.

The second argument adduced by Dyce in support of his opinion cannot lay claim to any greater cogency. Although Kemp, he says, was not 'grossly illiterate', as is proved by his *Nine Daies Wonder*, yet he could not boast of a faculty for poetry; for, 'if he had been a practised jig-maker', he would not have needed the assistance of a friend for the few verses inserted in the *Nine Daies Wonder*. If, however, we peruse this pamphlet without prejudice we cannot doubt but that Kemp himself, and no other, was the author of the two little pieces on p. 10 and p. 13 seq.; the good fellow, his friend, to whom he ascribes them is nothing but a poetical fiction, a mask, which is common enough, the predecessor of the 'judicious friend' in Lord Macaulay's *Life and Letters*. Both in matter and style these verses entirely agree with Kemp's prose; in both we meet with the same kind of wit and buffoonery, both are clearly from the same pen.

But Dyce goes still farther. Not only the *Merriments* and the *Jigs*, but everything else that bears Kemp's name, with the sole exception of the *Nine Daies Wonder*, he declares to be spurious. This leads us back to the above-mentioned little volume '*A Dutiful Inuective &c.*' which was published in 1587 with William Kemp's name on the title-page. This poem, written in iambic lines of seven feet, is

termed 'the first fruites of his labour' by the author and inscribed to the Lord Mayor of London. It is directed against the traitors Ballard and Babington, and expresses an ardent enthusiasm for the Queen. In this latter respect it is quite of a piece with the *Nine Daies Wonder*, towards the end of which the author assures us that 'al his mirths (meane though they be) haue bin and euer shal be implo'd to the delight of my royal Mistris; whose sacred name ought not to be remembred among such ribald rimes as these late thin-breech lying Ballet-singers haue proclaimed it.' This is the well-known language of all players and play-wrights of the time, who were abundantly thankful for the favour and patronage which the Queen extended to the stage. Although in 1587 Kemp had not yet succeeded to Tarlton, he may even at that time have attracted the notice of the Queen and received marks of her favour. In spite of all this Dyce does not hesitate to attribute the 'Dutiful Inuective' to another William Kemp, who, as Dyce informs us, was a schoolmaster at Plymouth, and who in the following year published a treatise under the title 'The Education of Children in Learning'. As, however, on the title-page of this latter tract we read only the initials W. K., there is nothing to assure us that they are meant for William Kemp. May they not stand just as well for Walter King, or Knight, or Kelly? But taking it for proven that there was a schoolmaster of the name of William Kemp living at Plymouth and that he was the author of the treatise in question, all that we may infer from this proposition is, that we have to deal with two William Kemps, the one living at London, the other at Plymouth; the one an actor, the other a schoolmaster; the one the author of the *Nine Daies Wonder*, the other the author of the *Education of Children in Learning*, and one of them the author of the

Dutiful Inuective. Now what reason have we to ascribe this latter production to the schoolmaster rather than to the actor? Is he to be thought endowed with a larger measure of the 'faculty divine' than his namesake the actor? And living at Plymouth, as he did, what reason had he to inscribe his treatise to the Lord Mayor of London? A London actor might well be induced to flatter His Lordship by the dedication of some document of dutiful loyalty and well-spent literary labour, as the grim City-potentate did not usually look with a benign eye on theatres and theatrical amusements, least of all jigs and clowns. Besides it should be remembered that when several years after Kemp danced his morris to Norwich, he began it before the Lord Mayor's house. And for what reason should the heart of the Plymouth schoolmaster have dilated with the same enthusiastic loyalty for the Queen, as did that of the London actor? That William Kemp, the actor, came before the public more than once in print is fairly to be inferred from the wellknown words which the student Philomusus addresses to him in *The Return from Parnassus* (1606): 'Indeed M. Kempe', he says, 'you are very famous, but that is as well for workes in print as your part in kue.' As we have seen, Dyce not only ridicules the expression 'workes' which may indeed be comically exaggerated, but he declares the whole statement to be incorrect and not deserving of belief; 'I understand', he says, 'the ironical compliment as an allusion to his (viz. Kemp's) *Nine Daies Wonder* only; for I feel assured that all the other pieces have been erroneously attributed to his pen.' This assertion, in my opinion, is by no means borne out by the facts and is wholly gratuitous.

In the same spirit of overstrained criticism Dyce discusses the journeys, which on the testimony of several contemporaries

were undertaken by Kemp; if we are to believe him, all of them, with the single exception of the morris to Norwich, are entirely fictitious. Now Kemp himself towards the end of the *Nine Daies Wonder* declares his intention of setting out on some journey; though not yet certain as to its aim, he mentions Rome, Jerusalem, and Venice as places where he should be most inclined to go. No account of such a journey is extant, and this fact is thought by Dyce a sufficient argument to deny its having been made at all. In the passage just quoted from *The Return from Parnassus*, however, Kemp is welcomed as having just come back from abroad and Philomusus and Studioso, the two Cambridge students, address him in the following words: — '*Phil.* What, M. Kempe, how doth the Emperour of Germany? *Stud.* God save you, M. Kempe; welcome. M. Kempe, from dancing the morrice over the Alpes.' Kemp's reply is this: — 'Well, you merry knaues, you may come to the honour of it one day: is it not better to make a foole of the world as I have done, then to be fooled of the world as you schollers are?' All this Dyce declares to be nothing but 'sportive allusions to Kemp's journey to Norwich', an assertion which hardly needs refutation. In what connection do the Emperor of Germany and the Alps stand to Norwich, and how can a mention of the former be taken for an allusion to the latter? According to the simplest rules of interpretation the question 'How doth the Emperour of Germany?' suggests the fact that Kemp saw the Emperor; or at least heard of him from persons attached to his court or train, as well he might if he had been in Germany. But if Kemp travelled at all he certainly did so in his capacity as a clown and dancer and it was no doubt the aim of his journey to turn his histrionic talents to the best possible account. Why then may he not have

acted before his Imperial Majesty? We know that John Spencer, who was at the head of a company of English actors in the service of the Elector of Brandenburg, travelled with his company in the South of Germany and performed several times before the Emperor and the Diet at Ratisbon in 1613.* If Kemp really should have done so before his countryman, he may very likely on his return have boasted of the honour and this boasting may have occasioned the comic exaggerations and railleries with which his friends and contemporaries bantered him, — a supposition which *mutatis mutandis* may likewise hold in regard to Kemp's so-called 'Works'.

Our belief in Kemp's journey to Italy is greatly strengthened by two additional testimonies. In the above-mentioned dedication of the pamphlet 'An Almond for a Parrot' Nash tells us that about the year 1588 he was in Italy and that at Bergamo the Italian 'arlechini' inquired about the celebrated M. Kemp of whom they spoke in terms of highest eulogy. This, I think, could not but prove an inducement to Kemp to go to Italy himself and there to make the acquaintance of his Italian fellow-clowns and admirers. The international intercourse between England and Italy, especially Northern Italy, was highly flourishing and a journey to Italy was easily and cheaply to be accomplished, — according to the notions and customs of the time. Nevertheless, it must be owned that Nash's dedication is written in that style of buffoonery which seems to be inseparable from the dedicator and still more so from the dedicatee, and as we are not sure to what extent similar jokes may have been thought allowable in those merry days it may be as well not to lay too great a stress

* A. Cöln., Shakespeare in Germany LXXXIV seq.

on this dedication. It is different, however, with a second testimony, also quoted by Dyce himself, viz. a passage in John Day's 'Travailes of the three English Brothers' &c., an *historical* (!) play which was published in 1607, but, according to Dyce, written before that time, as it is not yet divided into acts and scenes. Here Will Kemp is introduced, *in propria persona*, in a scene laid at Venice. In this scene an Englishman desires to be presented to Sir Anthony Shirley who is staying at Venice as ambassador from the Sophy. 'An Englishman?' Sir Anthony asks his servant, 'what's his name?' *Servt.* He calls himselfe Kempe. *Sir Anth.* Kemp! bid him come in. [*Exit Servant. Enter Kempe.*] Welcome, honest Will; and how doth all thy fellowes in England?' &c. Then an Italian clown and his wife make their appearance and ask permission to perform before Sir Anthony, who prevails upon Kemp to join in this performance of the two Italians. Kemp, however, takes great offence at a woman exhibiting before spectators, and therefore makes her and her husband the butt of his jokes and satirical remarks. Now this scene in my opinion would have been meaningless, and insipid, and hardly tolerable on a London stage, if Kemp had not been really at Venice and had not been a partaker there in some such exhibition. For this same reason we must conclude that 'The Travailes of the three English Brothers' was acted during Kemp's lifetime.

The date of Kemp's death is quite uncertain, the respective conjectures of Malone and Chalmers not being supported by positive evidence; according to Malone he died before 1609, according to Chalmers as early as 1603. That he was dead in 1612, is generally inferred from the passage in Heywood's Apologie quoted above, although Heywood's words are by no means explicit enough to remove all doubts. If we follow

Malone, who is generally a safe guide, Kemp may very well have witnessed the performance of the 'Travailes' and it is evident, provided he did not perform the part himself, that the zest of the joke for the audience must have been in seeing the real Kemp sitting amongst them opposite his counterfeit on the boards.

LXXXIV.

Tim. Thy backe, I prythee.

Ape. Live, and love thy misery.

Tim. Long live so, and so dye. I am quit.

Ape. No things like men,

Eate Timon, and abhorre then. [*Exit Apemantus.*]

TIMON OF ATHENS, IV, 3, 396 SEQQ.

This is the arrangement of the folio. The last two lines have rightly been given to Timon by the editors and in order to complete the metre Hamner and Capell have added *so* before the words *I am quit*. In my opinion, however, this is not sufficient to restore the passage; the words *Long live so, and so die* do not belong to Timon, but to Apemantus and the true arrangement, therefore, seems to be the following: —

Tim. Thy back, I prythee.

Ape. Live and love thy misery;

Long live so and so die. [*Exit Apemantus.*]

Tim. So I am quit. —

Moë things like men? — Eat, Timon, and abhor them.
(Shakespeare's dramatische Werke nach der Uebersetzung von Schlegel und Tieck, herausgegeben durch die Deutsche Shakespeare-Gesellschaft, X, 439. — Notes and Queries, June 25, 1870, p. 594.)

LXXXV.

Your greatest want is, you want much of meat.

TIMON OF ATHENS, IV, 3, 419.

Various conjectures have been proposed to cure this corrupted verse, none of which, however, proves satisfactory. Dyce, and the Cambridge Editors, therefore, have left the reading of the folio untouched as above. The word *much* is evidently owing to a diplography: the Banditti having just complained that they *much do want*. Steevens conjectures *much of me*, which would be most bald and trivial prose; he should have altered one more letter, for there seems to be little doubt that Shakespeare wrote *you want muck of me*, viz. gold, in which sense this word is frequently used. Compare the Ballad of Gernutus, the Jew of Venice, St. 6 (Percy's Reliques): —

His heart doth thinke on many a wile,
How to deceive the poore;
His mouth is almost ful of mucke,
Yet still he gapes for more.

Coriolanus II, 2, 128 seqq.: —

Our spoils he kick'd at,
And look'd upon things precious as they were,
The common muck of the world.

Thomas Heywood, If you know not me, you know nobody, Pt. II (ed. Collier for the Shakespeare-Society, 149): 'But, madam, you are rich, and by my troth, I am very poor, and I have been, as a man should say, stark naught; — and, though I have not the muck of the world, I have a great deal of good love, and I prithee accept of it.' — Nash, Summer's Last Will and Testament (Dodsley, 1825, IX, 23): 'If then the best husband has been so liberal of his best

handy-work, to what end should we make much of a glittering *excrement*, or doubt to spend at a banquet as many pounds, as he spends men at a battle?' — Ibid. IX, 25: '*Omnia mea mecum porto*, quoth Bias, when he had nothing but bread and cheese in a leathern bag, and two or three books in his bosom. Saint Francis, a holy saint, and never had any money. It is madness to doat upon mucke.' — Tell-Trothes New-yeares Gift (ed. Furnivall for the New Shakspeare Society, 69): 'Many looke so long for aboundance of mucke, as they fall into a quagmire of miseries, hauing siluer, to looke on, though wanting mony to supply many wants.' — Ibid. 75: 'Indeede, what cannot money doo, that will buye any thing? and yet honestie will purchase that which all the muck in the world cannot compasse, namely, a good report for euer.' — Forby, Vocabulary of East-Anglia s. v. Muckgrubber, 'a hunks; a sordid saver of money, who delves for it, as it were, in the mire.' 'Muckgrubbing, adj. sordidly avaricious.'

To revert to the passage in Timon. To the pretence of the bandits that they are no thieves, 'but men that much do want', Timon replies they could not possibly be in want, since nature, the bounteous housewife, on each bush laid her full mess before them; their only want was for muck, i. e. gold, and that was no real want. The same reproach is addressed by Timon to the painter and the poet (V, 1, 115):

Hence, pack! Here's gold; you came for gold, ye slaves.
(Shakespeare's dramatische Werke nach der Uebersetzung von Schlegel und Tieck, herausgegeben von der Deutschen Shakespeare-Gesellschaft, X, 439. — Notes and Queries, June 25, 1870, 594. Compare the ever-memorable reply by A. H[all], Notes and Queries, July 16, 1870, 43.)

LXXXVI.

Cæs. Ha! who calls?

Casca. Bid every noise be still: peace yet again!

Cæs. Who is it in the press that calls on me?

JULIUS CÆSAR, I, 2, 15 SEQQ.

According to the Cambridge Edition *ad loc.* Staunton seems to have been the only editor who takes exception to these lines as transmitted by the folio. In his opinion either the whole of the second line ought to be added to Cæsar's previous question *Who calls?* or the last word of it should be connected with the following speech of Cæsar, thus: —

Cæs. Ha! who calls?

Casca. Bid every noise be still: — peace yet!

Cæs. Who is it in the press that calls on me? Again!

This is even worse than the arrangement of the folio, and yet the true reading lies so near at hand that it will seem almost miraculous if I have not been forestalled in finding it out. Read, of course: —

Cæs. Ha! who calls? — [*To Casca*] Bid every noise

Casca. Peace yet again! [be still!

Cæs. Who is it in the press that calls on me?

Once before, at the beginning of the scene, where Cæsar addresses Calpurnia, Casca with marked officiousness silenced the crowd: —

Cæs. Calpurnia!

Casca. Peace ho! Cæsar speaks.

Nothing, therefore, can be more simple and natural than that Cæsar once more summons the assistance of Casca and that Casca again proclaims silence. (Anglia, herausgegeben von Wülcker und Trautmann, I, 341.)

LXXXVII.

Cassi. Am I not stay'd for? tell me:

Cinna. Yes, you are. O Cassius,
If you could but winne the Noble Brutus
To our party —

JULIUS CÆSAR, I, 3, 139 SEQQ.

The arrangement of these lines as given in the folio cannot possibly have proceeded from the poet's pen, and the editors, therefore, have made various attempts to heal the evident corruption. Capell, e. g., reads: —

Yes,
You are. O Cassius, if you could but win
The noble Brutus to our party.

The words *Yes, you are*, however, should not be severed, and must no doubt be connected with the preceding speech of Cassius in a line of verse. S. Walker (*Versification*, 290), Craik (*The English of Shakespeare*, 5th Ed., 120), and Staunton arrange as follows: —

Cassi. Am I not staid for? Tell me!
*Cinna.** Yes, you are.

O Cassius, if you could
But win the noble Brutus to our party.

But the incomplete line *O Cassius, if you could* does not harmonize with the metrical character of this play, which, it is well known, is of great regularity. Knight and Collier introduce an alexandrine: —

Yes, you are.
O Cassius, if you could but win the noble Brutus
To our party.

* Instead of *Cinna* Walker by an evident mistake has *Casca*.

In my opinion the difficulty might easily be removed, if we were to add *Caius* before *Cassius*, — he is elsewhere addressed by both his names, just as we find Caius Ligarius (in Julius Cæsar), Caius Marcius (in Coriolanus) and Caius Lucius (in Cymbeline). The lines then might be regulated thus: —

Cas. Am I not staid for? Tell me!

Cin. Yes, you are.

O Caius Cassius, if you could but win

The noble Brutus to our party.

Whether or not, we suppose the sentence to be broken off here, does not matter, at least it does not affect the alteration proposed. (Anglia, herausgegeben von Wülcker und Trautmann, I, 341 folg.)

LXXXVIII.

And then, they say, no spirit dare stir abroad;
The nights are wholesome; then no planets strike,
No fairy takes, nor witch hath power to charm,
So hallow'd and so gracious is the time.

HAMLET, I, 1, 161 SEQQ.

I hope I may be allowed to repeat a conjectural emendation which, although inserted in the text of my edition of Hamlet, has been left unnoticed by all subsequent editors — even by Dr Furness. The plural ‘planets’, which is the uniform reading of QB seqq. and all the Folios, does not harmonize well with the singulars ‘fairy’ and ‘witch’. Moreover, in all parallel passages we meet with the singular, thus, e. g., in The Winter’s Tale, I, 2, 201: —

It is a bawdy planet, that will strike

Where ’t is predominant.

Ibid. II, 1, 105: —

There's some ill planet reigns.

Titus Andronicus, II, 4, 14: —

If I do wake, some planet strike me down;

Ben Jonson, Every Man in his Humour, IV, 5: Sure I was struck with a planet thence, for I had no power to touch my weapon.

Under these circumstances I have no doubt that the text of QA 'no planet frikes' shows us the right way and that we should read, no planet strikes.

LXXXIX.

Hor. Indeed? I heard it not; it then draws near
the season

Wherein the spirit held his wont to walk.

HAMLET, I, 4, 5 SEQ.

Seymour (apud Furness) remarks on this verse: 'This line is overloaded. "I heard it not" is implied in "indeed". Read: Indeed? why then it does draw near the hour!' It need hardly be added that a conjecture of such unwarranted violence is not in accordance with the rules of modern criticism and cannot but be rejected. Nevertheless Seymour seems to have been on the right scent, for a verse of six feet looks suspicious and out of place here. This was evidently felt also by Rowe, who (according to the Cambridge Edition) expunged *Indeed*. In my opinion, the word *Indeed* does not belong to Horatio, but should be given to Hamlet, so that the passage would run thus:

Ham. The air bites shrewdly; it is very cold.

Hor. It is a nipping and an eager air.

Ham. What hour now?

Hor. I think it lacks of twelve.

Mar. No, it is struck.

Ham. Indeed?

Hor. I heard it not; it then draws near the season
Wherein the spirit held his wont to walk.

Only on the stage the import of this arrangement can be fully shown. Hamlet has evidently followed Horatio and Marcellus to the platform in a state of dreaminess; his question *What hour now?* is uttered rather listlessly and with no deeper motive than to break the silence. On hearing, however, from Marcellus that it has just struck midnight, he is at once roused to the most anxious expectation as now or never the appearance of the Ghost must be at hand. To this expectation he gives expression by the exclamation *Indeed?* — By the way, it may be added that the Editors of the Globe Edition, and Mr Moberly in their wake, give the words *No, it is struck*, in opposition to the Quartos as well as Folios, to Hamlet; on what grounds, it does not appear — at all events they ought to have been 'more relative'. Most likely it is only a mistake, the Cambridge Edition being in accordance with the old copies. (The Athenæum, Jan. 11, 1879, 46 seq. — Robinson's Epitome of Literature, Mar. 15, 1879, Vol. III, 48.)

XC.

The dram of eale

Doth all the noble substance of a doubt
To his owne scandle.

THE GLOBE EDITION OF SHAKESPEARE'S HAMLET, 1, 4, 36 SEQQ.

Among the numerous emendations of this notoriously corrupt passage that which Dyce has inserted in his text ('the dram of evil Doth all the noble substance *oft debase*') deserves the highest praise for its clear and unconstrained sense. It is, however, so remote from the reading of the old editions that, if it was what Shakespeare wrote, we can hardly conceive how such a corruption could have crept into the text. I think we might obtain a very near approach to the text, together with an unexceptionable sense, by reading: —

The dram of evil
Doth all the noble substance *often daub*
To his own scandal.

Compare *Romeo and Juliet*, III, 2, 55 seq.: —

Pale, pale as ashes, all bedaub'd in blood,
All in gore-blood; I swounded at the sight.

B. Jonson, *Every Man out of his Humour* (Induction): —

My soul
Was never ground into such oily colours
To flatter vice, and daub iniquity.

Beaumont and Fletcher, *The Knight of the Burning Pestle*,
V, 3: —

I shall never more
Hold open, whilst another pumps both legs,
Nor daub a sattin gown with rotten eggs.

A Warning for Fair Women, A. II, ll. 1448 seqq. (Simpson,
The School of Shakspeare, II, 325): —

Vile world, how like a monster come I soil'd from thee!
How have I wallowed in thy loathsome filth,
Drunk and besmear'd with all thy bestial sin,

Satires. By Joseph Hall, afterwards Bishop of Exeter and
Norwich &c. (Chiswick, 1824) Book IV, Sat. I, p. 78: —

The close adultress, where her name is red,
 Comes crawling from her husband's lukewarm bed,
 Her carrion skin bedaub'd with odours sweet
 Groping the postern with her bared feet. — —
 She seeks her third roost on her silent toes,
 Besmeared all with loathsome smoke of lust,
 Like Acheron's steams, or smouldering sulphur dust.

Milton, *Comus*, 916 seqq.: —

Next this marble venom'd seat,
 Smear'd with gums of glutinous heat,
 I touch with chaste palms moist and cold.

In regard to the sentiment expressed in Hamlet's words compare Nash, *Pierce Pennilesse* (ed. Collier for the Shakespeare Society, 53), a passage, which, as far as I know, has never yet been brought into comparison with the lines in Hamlet: 'Let him bee indued with neuer so manie vertues, and haue as much goodly proportion and fauour, as Nature can bestow vpon a man, yet if hee be thirstie after his owne destruction, and hath no ioy nor comfort, but when he is drowning his soule in a gallon pot, that one beastly imperfection wil vtterly obscure all that is commendable in him, and all his goode qualities sinke like lead downe to the bottome of his carrousing cups, where they will lye, like lees and dregges, dead and vregarded of any man.' — *Pierce Pennilesse*, to add this as a matter worthy of further consideration, was published in 1592, whilst the above Shakespearean passage does not appear in the quarto of 1603, but is only found in that of 1604. —

Eleven years after the first publication of this conjectural emendation (*The Athenæum*, Aug. 11, 1866, 186) Mr Samuel Neil, in his edition of Hamlet, apparently without any knowledge of my suggestion, proposed the following: —

This dram of *talc*

Doth all the noble substance *overdaube*,

To *its* own scandal.

Talc, which, Mr Neil says, 'was a wonderful cosmetic and preservative of the complexion, much in use in Shakespeare's time', would be just the reverse of what is required by the context. Some Elizabethan authority for the verb *overdaub* would have been welcome.

XCI.

You know, sometimes he walks four hours together,

Here in the lobby.

HAMLET, II, 2, 160 SEQ.

Dr Jacob Heussi in his edition of this tragedy (Parchim, 1868) has inserted Hamner's conjecture 'for' into the text and justifies this reading by the following note: 'Alle alten Drucke lesen freilich *four* statt *for*, und die Erklärer behaupten, *four* werde häufig als unbestimmte Zeit gebraucht, wie *forty*'; nirgends findet sich aber diese Behauptung durch ein wirkliches Beispiel constatirt; dass *four* heut zu Tage nicht in dieser Weise gebraucht wird, ist bekannt, ob es früher der Fall war, ist noch abzuwarten. Ich setze hier die Präposition *for* statt des *four* der Ausgaben, da diese Präposition die Zeitdauer bezeichnet.* Benno Tschischwitz (Shakspeare's Hamlet &c. Halle, 1869) reads *four*, but seems to take this number in its literal meaning. '*Four hours*', he says, 'wäre eine auffallend lange Zeit, um sich zu ergehen, wenn sie nicht der

* The latest American editor of Shakespeare's Tragedy of Hamlet, the Rev. Henry N. Hudson, also reads 'for', and does not even think it necessary to justify it.

Prinz, der gänzlich ohne die noblen Passionen eines Laertes ist, mit Lectüre und Meditationen ausfüllte. Auch Ophelia wird später aufgefordert 'to walk' und dabei in einem Buche zu lesen, es mag dies also wohl einer Zeitsitte entsprechen.' Mr Collier's corrected Folio exhibits the correction *for* and even Malone preferred this oft-repeated conjectural emendation to the reading of the old editions, although he adduces the following passage from Webster's *Duchess of Malfi* (IV, 1, 10 seq.), which is so much to the point that it ought to have removed every doubt: —

She will muse four hours together; and her silence,
Methinks, expresseth more than if she spake.

Malone (Supplement I, 352) goes so far as to suppose the same mistake to have taken place here as well as in *Hamlet* and Mr Collier in his Supplemental Notes I, 276 expresses the same conviction; 'the same probable misprint', he says, 'of *four* for *for* is contained in Webster's *Duchess of Malfi* A. IV (ed. Dyce I, 260), where Bosola is giving to Ferdinand a description of the demeanour of the heroine' &c.

The fact is that *four*, as well as *forty* and *forty thousand*, is most frequently used to denote an indefinite number and this use, dating from a very remote period, is by no means confined to the English language, but is also to be found in other languages. As an indefinite number generally supposes a large quantity it will not appear strange that *four* occurs much less frequently in this sense than *forty*; the instances, however, are numerous enough to convince even Dr Heussi.

After the remarks made by J. Grimm (*Deutsche Rechtsalterthümer*, 211 seqq.) on the number 'four' there can be little doubt as to its early connection with the four cardinal points and their influence on the construction of roads, the

distribution of land and other matters of custom.* But in German, as well as in English, all local and legal associations connected with this number have long ago vanished, and when in the *Lay of the Nibelungen* (Lachmann, 2014; Zarncke, 4th Ed., p. 318) we read: —

tūsent unde viere, die kōnen dar in,

‘tūsent’ merely means an indefinite quantity and ‘viere’ a surplus likewise indefinite. In Ayler’s dramas (ed. Keller, IV, 2796 and 2801) occur the following passages: —

Er würd wöl vier mahl vmb gebracht,

Er ein mal drōb thet erwachen,

and: —

Ach Ancilla, ich bitt durch Gott

Verlass mich nicht in dieser Noth!

Vier Cronen geb’ ich dir zu Lohn.

The earliest instance in English I have met with is in Robert Mannyng’s translation of Peter Langtoft’s *Chronicle* (apud Wülcker, *Altenglisches Lesebuch* I, 64 and 153): —

Sone in for yers perchance a werre shall rise.

Very near to the passage in *Hamlet* comes the following from Puttenham’s *Arte of English Poesie* (ed. Arber, 307): ‘laughing and giling with their familiars foure houres by the clocke.’ Other instances, no less striking, are supplied by the Elizabethan dramatists, Shakespeare amongst the number.

In the *Old Play of Timon* (ed. Dyce p. 7) we read: —

Timon, lend me a little goulden dust,

To free me from this feind; some fower talents,

Will doe it.

*With the Hawaiians, according to Pott (*Die quinare und vigesimala Zählmethode*, Halle, 1847, S. 74 seq.) four is the primary number and is possibly taken from the four extremities of the human body.

S. Rowley, When you see me, you know me (ed. Elze, 22): 'The lords has attended here this four days.' — Lilly's *Endimion*, IV, 2 (Dramatic Works, ed. F. W. Fairholt, I, 53): 'Sim. But how wilt thou live? *Epi.* By angling; O 'tis a stately occupation to stand foure houres in a colde morning, and to have his nose bitten with frost before his baite be numbled with a fish.' — Lord Cromwell, II, 2 (Malone's Supplement, II, 391): 'We were scarce four miles in the green water, but I, thinking to go to my afternoon's nuncheon, felt a kind of rising in my guts.' — Webster, *The White Devil*, or *Vittoria Corombona* (The Works of John Webster, ed. Dyce, 1857, 47a): —

I made a vow to my deceas'd lord,
Neither yourself nor I should outlive him
The numbering of four hours.

Ibid. (ed. Dyce, 49b): —

O could I kill you forty times a day,
And use 't four years together, 'twere too little.

Fair Em (ed. Delius, 17): —

I have not seen him this four days at the least.

The Winter's Tale, V, 2, 146 seqq.: *Amblycus.* I know you are now, sir, a gentleman born. *Clown.* Ay, and have been so any time these four hours.' — *K. Henry V*, V, 1, 42 seq.: 'I say, I will make him eat some part of my leek, or I will peat his pate four days.'

These passages, I think, are amply sufficient for the vindication of the reading *four hours*, but in order fully to illustrate the subject the numbers *forty* and *forty thousand* must also be taken into consideration. As early as in the Old Testament 'forty' is used in an indefinite sense; the Deluge lasts forty days and forty nights; Moses with the Jews lives forty years in the wilderness (Acts, XIII, 18) and stays forty

days and forty nights on Mount Sinai (Exodus, XXIV, 18). According to the Book of Judges (III, 11; V, 31; VIII, 28) the land had repeatedly rest for forty years and the children of Israel were delivered into the hands of the Philistines for forty years (Judges, XIII, 1).* Jesus fasted forty days and forty nights in the wilderness (Matth., IV, 2). The same use prevails in the popular poetry both of Germany and England. Thus in the ballad, *Das Schloss in Oesterreich* (apud Scherer, *Jungbrunnen*, 3^d Ed., 67) we read: —

Darinnen liegt ein junger Knab
Auf seinen Hals gefangen,
Wol vierzig Klafter tief unter der Erd'
Bei Ottern und bei Schlangen.

Jacob Ayer (*Dramatic Works*, ed. Keller, V, 3213) says: —
Starb doch der gross Riess Goliat,
Der deiner sterckh wol firtzigk hat.

In the English romance of Richard Cœur-de-Lion Richard winds forty yards of silk cloth round his arm before putting it into the lion's mouth and tearing out his heart; compare Percy's *Reliques*, *Essay on the Ancient Metrical Romances*.

Instances of the use of 'forty' in Elizabethan dramatists are exceedingly frequent. Webster, *The White Devil*, or *Vittoria Corombona* (Works, ed. Dyce 26 b): —

Wilt sell me forty ounces of her blood
To water a mandrake?

Heywood, *If you know not me, you know nobody* (ed. Collier, 71; cf. *ibid.* 125): —

* Also the numbers *four*, *twenty* (the half of forty), *twenty two thousand*, *forty thousand*, and *four hundred thousand* seem to have been used in an indefinite sense in the Old Testament as well as in the Elizabethan dramatists; cf. Judges XI, 46. XIX, 2. IV, 3. XX, 21. XV, 20. XVI, 31. V, 8. XX, 2. XX, 17.

Bid him by that token
Sort thee out forty pounds' worth of such wares
As thou shalt think most beneficial.

Ben Jonson, *The Devil is an Ass*, II, 8: —

O, sir! and dresses himself the best! beyond
Forty o' your ladies! Did you ne'er see him?

B. Jonson, *Epiccene*, IV, 1: I have not kissed my Fury these forty weeks. — *Ibid.*: A most vile face! And yet she spends me forty pound a year in mercury and hogsbones. — *Bartholomew Fair*, II, 1: Like enough, sir; she'll do forty such things in an hour (an you listen to her) for her recreation. — *Ibid.* III, 1: Put him a-top o' the table, where his place is, and he'll do you forty fine things. — Marlowe, *The Jew of Malta*, IV, 4 (ed. Dyce, 168 b): Within forty foot of the gallows, conning his neckverse. — Beaumont and Fletcher, *The Knight of Malta*, III, 4: —

Oh, 't was royal music!

And to procure a sound sleep for a soldier,
Worth forty of your fiddles.

Twelfth Night, V, 1, 180 seq.: I had rather than forty pound I were at home. — *A Midsummer-Night's Dream*, II, 1, 175 seq.: —

I'll put a girdle round about the earth
In forty minutes.

The Merry Wives of Windsor, I, 1, 205: I had rather than forty shillings, I had my book of songs and sonnets here. — *The Comedy of Errors*, IV, 3, 84: —

A ring he hath of mine worth forty ducats —
For forty ducats is too much to lose.

Henry VIII, V, 4, 53 seq.: When I might see from far some forty truncheoners draw to her succour.

Even now-a-days this use of 'forty' is by no means extinct. In Wordsworth's little poem 'Written in March' (Poetical Works, Moxon, 1850, 6 vols, II, 110) we read: —

The cattle are grazing,
Their heads never raising;
There are forty feeding like one.

The well-known ballad 'Barbara Frietchie' by Mr J. G. Whittier (Complete Poetical Works, Boston, 1879, 270) contains the following lines: —

Forty flags with their silver stars,
Forty flags with their crimson bars,

Flapped in the morning wind: the sun
Of noon looked down, and saw not one.

'Forty thousand' occurs in *Tamburlaine*, II, 1¹ (ed. Dyce, 13b): —

Our army will be forty thousand strong.

Edward III, IV, 6 (ed. Delius 78): —

No less than forty thousand wicked elders
Have forty lean slaves this day ston'd to death.

Webster, *The White Devil*, or *Vittoria Corombona* (Works, ed. Dyce, 25a): I'd — — be entered into the list of the forty thousand pedlers in Poland. *The Winter's Tale*, IV, 4, 279 seqq.: Here's another ballad of a fish, that appeared upon the coast on Wednesday the fourscore of April, forty thousand fathom above water and sung this ballad against the hard hearts of maids.

In *Lagamon*, 25, 395 we have 'feouwer hundred thusende'.

It is a noteworthy fact that the halves also of these numbers, from 'two' upwards, are used in the same indefinite sense. *K. Lear*, I, 2, 169 seqq.: *Edm.* 'Spake you' with him?

Edg. Ay, two hours together. — The Old Play of Timon
(ed. Dyce, 73): —

Gelas. Pseudocheus,

How many miles think you that wee must goe?

Pseud. Two thousande, forty four.

Hamlet, IV, 4, 25: —

Two thousand souls, and twenty thousand ducats.*

No-body and Some-body l. 1276 seqq. (Simpson, The School
of Shakspeare I, 327): —

Two thousand Souldiers have I brought from Wales,
To wait upon the princely Periclure.

Malg. As many of my bold confederates
Have I drawn from the South, to sweare allegiance
To young Vigenius.

The use of 'twenty', as is to be expected, far exceeds that
of 'two' in frequency. The Merchant of Venice, II, 6, 60: —

I have sent twenty out to seek for you.

Ibid. III, 4, 74: —

And twenty of these pmy lies I'll tell.

Ibid. III, 4, 84: —

For we must measure twenty miles to-day,
where, however, 'twenty' may possibly have been used in its
literal sense; see my Abhandlungen zu Shakespeare, 301. —
The Tempest, II, 1, 278 seqq.: —

twenty consciences

That stand twixt me and Milan, candied be they

And melt ere they molest.

The Taming of the Shrew, Ind. II, 37 seqq.: —

* S. Walker (Crit. Exam. III, 268) feels convinced, that an in-
definite number is required here, but, not being aware of the true
nature of 'two thousand', needlessly conjectures 'Ten thousand'.

Apollo plays
And twenty caged nightingales do sing.

Richard II, II, 2, 14: —

Each substance of a grief hath twenty shadows.

Heywood, If you know not me, you know nobody (ed. Collier, 125): —

Thou owest me but twenty pound
I'll venture forty more.

Ibid. ed. Collier, 150: —

Now, for your pains, there is twenty pound in gold.

The Return from Parnassus, III, 2 (Hawkins, Origin of the English Drama, III, 242): When he returns, I'll tell twenty admirable lies of his hawk. — Ibid. (Hawkins, III, 249): —

His hungry sire will scrape you twenty legs
From one good Christmas meal on Christmas-day, &c.

S. Rowley, When you see me, you know me (ed. Elze, 36): King Harry loves a man and I perceive there's some mettle in thee, there's twenty angels for thee.* — In Chapman's Alphonsus (ed. Elze, 49) a poison is extolled because —

it is twenty hours before it works,
whilst in Marlowe's Jew of Malta, III (ed. Dyce, 163b) it is said of another poison that even forty hours must elapse before its effect be perceived: —

It is a precious powder that I bought
Of an Italian, in Ancona, once,
Whose operation is to bind, infect,
And poison deeply, yet not appear
In forty hours after it is ta'en.

* A few lines before the King gives one of the Prisoners 'forty angels', to drink to King Harry's health.

A Warning for Fair Women, A. II, l. 820 seq. (Simpson, The School of Shakspeare, II, 300): —

Roger, canst thou get but twenty pound,
Of all the plate that thou hadst from us both.

Ibid. A. II, l. 1062 seq. (Simpson, II, 310): —

I have heard it told, that digging up a grave
Wherein a man had twenty years been buried, &c.

'Twenty-thousand' occurs hardly less frequently than 'twenty'. The Two Gentleman of Verona, II, 6, 16: —

With twenty thousand soul-confirming oaths.

The Merry Wives of Windsor, IV, 4, 90: —

Though twenty thousand worthier come to crave her.

Love's Labour's Lost, V, 2, 37: —

I am compared to twenty thousand fairs.

The Taming of the Shrew, II, 1, 123 and V, 2, 113: twenty thousand crowns. K. Richard II, IV, 1, 59: —

To answer twenty thousand such as you.

2 K. Henry VI, III, 2, 141 seq.: —

Fam' would I go to chafe his paly lips
With twenty thousand kisses.

Ibid. III, 2, 206: —

Though Suffolk dare him twenty thousand times.

Coriolanus, III, 3, 70: —

Within thine eyes sat twenty thousand deaths.

Hamlet, IV, 4, 60: —

The imminent death of twenty thousand men.

In Dryden's alteration of the Tempest, IV, 1, we meet with 'twenty hundred': —

You cannot tell me, sir,

I know I'm made for twenty hundred women.

(I mean if there so many be in th' world), &c.

The very acme of indefinite numbers is reached, curiously enough, by a rather sedate and cool-headed character, viz. Friar Laurence in *Romeo and Juliet*, III, 3, 153: —

and call thee back

With twenty hundred thousand times more joy

Then thou went'st forth in lamentation.

Also 'four and twenty' and 'two and twenty' may be mentioned as indefinite numbers; the former occurs in *The Winter's Tale*, IV, 3, 43: She hath made me four and twenty nose-gays for the shearers; and in *1 K. Henry IV*, III, 3, 85: and money lent you, four and twenty pound: 'Two and twenty' is found in *1 K. Henry IV*, I, 1, 68 seq.: —

Ten thousand bold Scots, two and twenty knights,

Balk'd in their own blood did Sir Walter see

On Holmedon's plain.

Ibid. II, 2, 16 seq.: I have forsworn his company hourly any time this two and twenty years, and yet I am bewitched with the rogue's company. — *Ibid.* III, 3, 211: O for a fine thief, of the age of two and twenty or thereabouts.

Even 'eighty' (= twice forty) occurs in an indefinite sense; see Hawkins, *The Origin of the English Drama* (Oxford, 1773) III, 233: Hark thou sir; you shall have eighty thanks.

I am of course far from asserting that no other numbers but those here discussed are used to denote an indefinite quantity; on the contrary several others such as 'three', 'seven', 'three and twenty' (*Troilus and Cressida*, I, 2, 255), 'three and twenty thousand' (*1 K. Henry VI*, I, 1, 113), 'five and twenty', 'five and twenty thousand' (*3 K. Henry VI*, II, 1, 181), are used more or less frequently in the same manner. (*Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XI*, 288 folgg.)

XCII.

When we have shuffled off this mortal coil.

HAMLET, III, 1, 67.

A non-English critic may well pause before questioning an expression which for a couple of centuries has been, as it were, a household word with all English-speaking people. I am, however, unable to silence the critical doubts to which the expression 'mortal coil' has given rise in me and which are greatly increased by the disagreement that prevails even among English editors about it. Warburton takes 'coil' in the sense of 'turmoil, bustle', and Al. Schmidt (*Shakespeare-Lexicon*, s. v.) likewise defines it by 'this turmoil of mortality, of life'; Heath thinks 'mortal coil' means the 'incumbrance of this mortal body'; and Caldecott does not hesitate to claim two (or three) meanings at one and the same time for the word, viz. that of 'turmoil' and that of 'ringlet' or 'slough'. 'It is here used,' he says, 'in each of its senses: turmoil, or bustle, and that which entwines or wraps round. Snakes generally lie like the coils of ropes; and it is conceived that an allusion is here had to the struggle which that animal is obliged to make in casting his slough.' — This explanation, though backed by no less an authority than Dr Furness, in my opinion can hardly be maintained, since the meaning of the word 'coil' with Elizabethan writers can be shown to have been quite definite and unequivocal. Other critics think 'coil' in our passage to be equivalent to what Fletcher (*Bonduca*, IV, 1) calls the 'case of flesh'. 'It has been contended,' says Dr Ingledby (*Shakespeare Hermeneutics*, 88) 'that in Hamlet's speech, the "mortal coil" is the coil, i. e. the trouble or turmoil, incident to man's mortal state: but the analogies are too strong in favour of the "mortal coil"

being what Fletcher calls the "case of flesh". — It is greatly to be regretted that Dr Ingleby has not favoured his readers with some one or other of these strong analogies. In the same, or at least in a similar, sense the word seems to have been taken by R. Chambers in his Traditions of Edinburgh, 198 seq.: 'Or does the "mortal coil" in which the light of mind is enveloped, become thinner or more transparent by the wearing of deadly sickness?' The explanation of the passage given by James Henry Hackett (Notes and Comments upon Certain Plays and Actors of Shakespeare, New York, 1864, 21 and 25) comes nearly to the same. This supposed signification of the word, however, is not supported by testimony; it is rather a signification 'for the nonce', a *petitio principii*. Still less acceptable seems that which a late English friend of mine imagined to be the meaning of 'coil' in the present passage; he understood it to denote a slough. But, 'coil' nowhere occurs in this sense, and if it did, this sense would not fit the present passage, inasmuch as the poet does by no means speak of our mortal coil as of something which like a slough has already been cast off, but as of something which we are still wearing.

Apart from the line under discussion, the word 'coil' occurs eleven times in Shakespeare and in all these passages has the signification of 'turmoil, bustle, noise, disturbance'. To examine these instances which are enumerated both in Mrs Cowden Clarke's Concordance and in Al. Schmidt's Shakespeare-Lexicon would be labour thrown away, especially since all editors agree with respect to their interpretation. As may be expected, the word is no less frequent with other dramatists, and writers of the Elizabethan era, and in order to get firm ground for our further inquiry it may, perhaps, be as well first to give a list of all those various

passages which in the course of many years' reading I have been able to collect.

1. Marlowe, 2 *Tamburlaine*, IV, 1 (ed. Dyce, 61b): —

Caly. I would my father would let me be put in the front of such a battle once, to try my valour! [*Alarms within.*] What a coil they keep! I believe there will be some hurt done anon amongst them.

2. Marlowe, *Faustus*, V, 1 (ed. Dyce, 129a; ed. W. Wagner, 94): —

Duke. What rude disturbers have we at the gate?

Go, pacify their fury, set it ope,

And then demand of them what they would have.

[*They knock again, and call out to talk with*

Faustus.

Serv. Why, how now, masters! what a coil is there!

What is the reason you disturb the Duke?

3. Marlowe, *The Tragedy of Dido*, A. IV init. (ed. Dyce, 265a): —

I think it was the devil's revelling night,

There was such hurly-burly in the heavens:

Doubtless Apollo's axle-tree is crack'd,

Or agèd Atlas' shoulder out of joint,

The motion was so over-violent.

Iar. In all this coil, where have ye left the queen?

4. Marlowe, *Hero and Leander*, Sixth Sestiad (ed. Dyce, 307a): —

As when you descry

A ship, with all her sail contends to fly

Out of the narrow Thames with winds unapt,

Now crosseth here, then there, then this way rapt,

And then bath one point reach'd, then alters all,

And to another crookèd reach doth fall

Of half a bird-bolt's shoot, keeping more coil
Than if she danc'd upon the ocean's toil.

5. Ben Jonson, *Cynthia's Revels*, IV, 1: —
Heart of my body, here's a coil, indeed, with your jealous humours.

6. Ben Jonson, *Bartholomew Fair*, I, 1: —
Do you hear! Jack Littlewit, what business does thy pretty head think this fellow may have, that he keeps such a coil with?

7. *Ibid.*, I, 1: —
And then he is such a ravener after fruit! — you will not believe what a coil I had t' other day to compound a business between Cather'ne pear woman and him, about snatching: 't is intolerable, gentlemen!

8. Ben Jonson, *Volpone*, II, 1 (Nano sings): —
You that would last long, list to my song,
Make no more coil, but buy of this oil.

9. Edward III, IV, 6 (ed. Delius, 76): —
What need we fight, and sweat, and keep a coil,
When railing crows outscold our adversaries.

10. *The Spanish Tragedy*, A. III (Qu. 1618, 32a): —
How now, what noise? What coyle is that you keepe?
[*A noyse within.*]

11. Lord Cromwell, I, 1 (Malone's Supplement, II, 374): —
He keeps such a coil in his study, with the sun, and the moon, and the seven stars, that I do verily think he'll read out his wits.

12. Middleton, *The Mayor of Quinborough*, III, 3 (Dodsley, 1780, XI, 127): —
Here's no sweet coil, I am glad they are so reasonable.
(Some lines *antè* we have the stage-direction: *A noise without.*)

13. S. Rowley, *When you see me, you know me* (ed. Elze, 11): —

Dost thou hear, Harry, what a coil they keep?

14. *Eastward Ho!* IV, 1 (The Works of George Chapman: Plays. Ed. R. H. Shepherd, 470a): —

'S light! I think the devil be abroad, in likeness of a storm, to rob me of my horns! Hark, how he roars! Lord! what a coil the Thames keeps!

15. *Arden of Feversham*, V, 6 (ed. Delius, 49): —

'Zounds! here's a coil;

You were best swear me on the interrogatories,

How many pistols you have took in hand,

Or whether I love the smell of gunpowder,

Or dare abide the noise the dag will make,

Or will not wink at flashing of the fire?

16. *Rob. Chester's Loves Martyr* ed. Grosart, 94 (for the New Shakspeare Society): —

Then Rage and Danger doth their senses haunt,

And like mad Ajax they a coile do keepe,

Till leane-fac'd Death into their heart doth creepe.

17. *Histrion-Mastix*, A. III, l. 92 (Simpson, *The School of Shakspeare*, II, 47): —

What a coyle keepes those fellows there?

18. *A Pleasant Comedie of Pasquil and Katherine*, A. II (Simpson, *The School of Shakspeare*, II, 162): —

What harsh, vnciuill tongue keeps such a coyle?

19. *Marston, Antonio and Mellida*, A. II init. (Keltie, *The British Dramatists*, Edinburgh, 1870, 352): —

'S lid (cried Signior Bulurdo) O for Don Basilisco's armour in the Mirror for Knighthood; what coil's here? O for an armour cannon-proof; O more cable, more featherbeds, more feather-

beds, more cable, till he had as much as my cable hatband, to fence him.

20. Hugh Holland, quoted in Malone's Shakespeare by Boswell (1821), II, 221 (according to S. Walker, Crit. Exam., II, 116): —

Here no need is of my sorry charmes
To boast it, though my braines Apollo warmes;
Where, like in Jove's, Minerva keeps a coile.

21. Nash, Summer's Last Will and Testament (Dodsley, 1825, IX, 26): —

Heigh ho! Here is a coil indeed to bring beggars to stocks.

22. Ibid. (Dodsley, 1825, IX, 40): —
Here is a coil about dogs without wit.

23. Nash, Pierce Pennilesse, ed. Collier, 48 (for the Shakespeare Society): —

Lord! what a coyle have we, this course and that course, removing this dish higher, setting another lower, and taking away the third. A generall might in lesse space remove his camp, than they stand disposing of their gluttony.

24. Nash, A Private Epistle of the Author to the Printer &c. before the second edition of Pierce Pennilesse (ed. Collier, XIV): —

And, lastly, to the ghost of Robert Greene, telling him what a coyle there is with pampheting [*sic*, read *pamphleting*] on him after his death.

25. Rob. Armin's Nest of Ninnies, ed. Collier, 28 (for the Shakespeare Society): —

Well, they fall out, they go together by the eares and such a hurly-burly is in the roome that passes. At last the stooles they fly about, the pots they walke, the glasses they go together; nay, the prayerbookes they flie into the fire, that such a noise there was that the whole house wondered at

this folly. Persuasions wer to no purpose; dores he would open none, till they violently brake them open, though they were of gold; and so they did and entered the parlour, found all this leuell [Collier conjectures *lewd* or *wicked*] coyle, and his pate broken, his face scratcht, and leg out of joynt.

26. Gascoigne's Princely Pleasures with the Masque intended to have been presented before Qu. Elizabeth at Kenilworth Castle 1575. With an Introductory Memoir and Notes. London, 1821. P. 6: —

What stir, what coil is here? come back, hold, whither now?

Not one so stout to stir, what harrying have we here?

27. Beaumont and Fletcher, The Humorous Lieutenant, V, 4: —

And such a coil there is

Such fending and such proving.

To these instances of the substantive 'coil' I join three passages in which the verb 'to coil' occurs, once in the signification 'to wind, to form ringlets', twice in the signification 'to beat, to drub'. They are: —

28. Beaumont and Fletcher, The Knight of Malta, II, 1: —

Third Sol. We have seen the fight, sir.

Ver. Yes; coil'd up in a cable, like salt eels,

Or buried low i' th' ballast: do you call that fighting?

29. A Comedy of K. Cambises (Hawkins, Origin of the English Drama, I, 266): —

Here draw and fight. Here she must lay on and coyle them both, the Vice must run his way for feare &c.

30. The Wife Lapped in Morel's Skin (The Old Taming of a Shrew, ed. Th. Anyot for the Shakespeare Society, 70): —

Except she turne and change her minde,

And eake her conditions everichome,

She shall fynde me to her so vnkinde.

That I shall her coyle both backe and bone,
 And make her blew and also blacke,
 That she shall grone agayne for woe.

This is the whole number of instances of 'coil' which I have come across in Elizabethan literature; there may, no doubt, be many more, but I have no knowledge of them. I hardly need assure the reader that I do not withhold a single instance, least of all one where 'coil' might be taken in a different sense. As to the modern use of the word the influence of the Hamlet-passage, in many cases, is distinctly discernible, even where we have not to deal with a mere quotation of, or an intentional allusion to, it. I continue my list, beginning this, its second series with the era of the Restoration.

31. Davenant, *The Playhouse to be Let*, A. V (Works, 1673, II, 118): —

Widow, be friends, make no more such a hot coyle;
 We'll find out rich Husband to make the pot boyl.

32. Butler, *Hudibras*, Part I, Canto 3, 183 seqq.: —

He rag'd, and kept as heavy a Coil as
 Stout Hercules for Loss of Hylas;
 Forcing the Vallies to repeat
 The Accents of his sad Regret.

33. Scott, *The Lady of the Lake*, Canto III, 24: —

The signal roused to martial coil
 The sullen margin of Loch Voil.

34. *Ibid.*, Canto V, 16: —

Like adder darting from his coil,
 Like wolf that dashes through the toil,
 Like mountain-cat who guards her young,
 Full at Fitz-James's throat he sprung.

35. Scott, *Rokeby*, Canto III, 6: —

Thus circled in his coil, the snake
 When roving hunters beat the brake,
 Watches with red and glistening eye,
 Prepared, if heedless step draw nigh,
 With forked tongue and venom'd fang
 Instant to dart the deadly pang;
 But if the intruders turn aside,
 Away his coils unfolded glide
 And through the deep Savannah wind,
 Some undisturb'd retreat to find.

36. Scott, *The Lord of the Isles*, Canto I, Introd.: —
 Where rest from mortal coil the mighty of the Isles.

37. Leigh Hunt, *The Story of Rimini*, init.: —

And when you listen you may hear a coil
 Of bubbling springs about the grassier soil.

38. R. Chambers, *Traditions of Edinburgh* (New Edition)
 p. 111: —

She now became alarmed, screamed for help, and waved her arms distractedly; all of which signs brought a crowd to the shore she had just left, who were unable, however, to render her any assistance, before she had landed on the other side — fairly cured, it appeared, of all desire of quitting the uneasy coil of mortal life.

Another passage in the same book has already been mentioned on p. 98.

39. Carlyle, *History of Friedrich II of Prussia* (Tauchn. Ed.)
 I, 192: —

The marriage was done in the Church of Innsbruck, 10 Feb. 1342 (for we love to be particular), Kaiser Ludwig, happy man, and many Princes of the Empire, looking on; little thinking what a coil it would prove.

The verb 'to coil' has only thrice occurred to me in modern writers, viz.:

40. Southey, *The Life of Nelson*, Chap. I (London, Bell, 1876, p. 21): —

He started up, and found one of the deadliest serpents of the country coiled up at his feet.

41. Galt, *The Life of Lord Byron* (Paris, Baudry, 1835) p. 232: —

I felt the many-foot and beetle creep,
And on my breast the cold worm coil and crawl.

42. J. G. Whittier, *Complete Poetical Works* (Boston, 1879) p. 1: —

The moonlight through the open bough
Of the gnar'd beech, whose naked root
Coils like a serpent at his foot,
Falls, checkered on the Indian's brow.

After all these instances there can hardly remain a doubt as to the signification of the substantive 'coil' and it is evident that during the Elizabethan period it occurs exclusively in the meaning of 'turmoil, bustle, tumult, noise'; its second meaning (= ringlet, winding) being only to be met with in modern authors. The fact is, that we have to distinguish between two different words of entirely different origin. Messrs Wedgwood and Skeat are agreed in deriving 'coil' No. 1 from the Celtic; 'Gael. *gail*, boiling, fume, battle, rage, fury; O. Gael. *gáill*, war, fight; Irish *gáill*, war, fight; Irish and Gael. *gáillean*, prattle, vain tattle; Gael. *colleid*, a stir, movement, noise. — Gael. and Ir. *gail*, to boil, rage. As to 'coil' No. 2 there is as yet no proof that during the Elizabethan era it was used as a substantive; with the writers of this period it only occurs as a verb (see No. 28) which according to Mr Skeat originally means 'to gather together';

Mr Skeat and Mr Stratmann (Old English Dictionary, 3^d Ed., 128a) rightly derive it from O. F. *coillir*, *cuillir*, *cueillir*, Lat. *colligere*. Thus it appears that the substantive 'coil' in the sense of 'ringlet, winding' is a recent formation, derived from the verb. Even 'coil' No. 1 does by no means seem to be an old English word; it is not contained in either Stratmann's Dictionary or in Matzner's Sprachproben (Glossary). Now, if critics are justly required to be conservative, commentators, in my opinion, ought to be possessed of the same quality, and ought by no means to ascribe any other signification to a word than that in which it is used, without exception, by contemporary writers. In the above line of Hamlet, therefore, a methodical critic has no choice left but to take 'mortal coil' simply, and unequivocally, in the sense of 'mortal turmoil, bustle, noise', which we are required or expected some day to shuffle off.

Under these circumstances I cannot refrain from thinking our passage to be corrupt. M. Mason, who was of the same opinion, proposed to read *this mortal spoil*; but neither Shakespeare, nor any other Elizabethan dramatist, seems to have used 'spoil' in the sense of 'slough', in which sense Mason wishes it to be understood. An anonymous critic in the Appendix to Shakespeare's Dramatic Works (Leipsic, 1820) p. 106 conjectures *foil* or *clay*, whilst I myself, in my edition of Hamlet (Leipzig, 1857), have been led to suggest 'vail' instead of 'coil'. I have, however, withdrawn this suggestion since I am convinced that the passage may be corrected in a much easier, and, at the same time, more satisfactory manner. Stevens, ad loc., quotes a similar passage from 'A dofull discours of two Straungers, a Lady and a Knight' (in The firste Parte of Churchyardes Chippes, London, 1575, fol. 32v), without, however, profiting of the opportunity for correcting

the Hamlet-passage, which to him seems to have presented no difficulty whatever. Churchyard's verses are these: —

Yea, shaking of this sinfull soyle
 Me thincke in cloudes I see
 Amonge the perfite chosen lambs,
 A place preperde for mee.

It is certainly not assuming too much that Shakespeare had read Churchyard's *Chippes*, which were published when he was eleven years of age, and that the lines may have flashed through his memory when he was writing his most celebrated monologue. At all events our passage does not offer the least difficulty if we substitute 'soil' for 'coil'. The expression 'mortal soil' would on the contrary perfectly agree not only with the poet's own sentiments, but also with those of his contemporaries who love to represent the human body as a piece of earth or a heap of dirt or loam. Who does not remember Hamlet's words in the churchyard-scene (V, 1, 231): 'Alexander died, Alexander was buried, Alexander returneth to dust; the dust is earth; of earth we make loam, and why of that loam, whereto he was converted, might they not stop a beer-barrel?' — Similar passages occur in *The Tempest*, I, 2, 313: —

Caliban,

Thou earth, thou! speak —
 and *ibid.* I, 2, 345: —

I have used thee

Filth as thou art with human care.

Still more, to the point, is the well-known line in *Sonnet*, CXLVI, which forms, as it were, a transition from the *Doleful Discourse* to our passage in *Hamlet*: —

Poor soul, the centre of my sinful earth.

Compare also K. John, V, 1, 57 seq.: —

And then, all this thou seest is but a clod
And module of confounded royalty.

Julius Cæsar, III, 1, 254: —

O pardon me, thou bleeding piece of earth.

The Merchant of Venice, V, 1, 63 seq.: —

Such harmony is in immortal souls;
But whilst this muddy vesture of decay
Doth grossly close it in, we cannot hear it.

Among Shakespeare's contemporaries only the following may be quoted: Dekker, *Old Fortunatus* (*Old English Plays*, London, 1814, III, 112): —

I set an idiot's cap on virtue's head,
Turn learning out of doors, clothe wit in rags,
And paint ten thousand images of loam
In gaudy silken colours.

Th. Heywood's *Love's Mistress* I, 5 (*The Old English Drama*, London, 1825, II, 18): —

A piece of moving earth —

S. Rowley, *When you see me, you know me*, ed. Elze, 13: —

The child is fair, the mother earth and clay.

The *New Tragical Comedie of Apius and Virginia* (Dodsley, 1825, XII, 431 seq.) where Virginius exclaims: —

O man, O mould, o mucke, oh clay, oh hell, oh hellish
O false judge Appius, &c. [hounded,

Whetstone's *Remembraunce of the wel imployed Life, and godly End, of George Gascoigne, Esquire* (G. Gascoigne, ed. Arber, 24): —

And what is man? Dust, slime, a puf of winde,

Conceiued in sin, &c.

Glaphorne, *Albertus Wallenstein*, III, 3 (*The Old English Drama*, II, 40): —

They (viz. these desires) are all fleshly
 Sordid, as is the clay this frame's compos'd of.
 Sir Philip Sidney, *An Apologie for Poetrie*, ed. Arber, 29: —
 The final end is, to lead and draw vs to as high a perfection,
 as our degenerate soules, made worse by their clayey lod-
 gings, can be capable of.

To these English writers a German contemporary of
 Shakespeare may be joined, who passed a great part of his
 life in London, viz. the poet Rudolf Weckherlin. His poem
 'Elend des menschlichen Lebens' (*W. Müller's Bibliothek*
deutscher Dichter des siebzehnten Jahrhunderts, IV, 81) begins
 with the following lines: —

Du wenig Koth, du wenig Staub,
 Hochmüthig durch ein wenig Leben,
 Durch welches Leben, wie ein Laub,
 Du kannst ein' Weil' allhie umschweben.

All these instances are of too striking a character not
 to lend the strongest support to the emendation 'mortal soil'.
 But also in respect to the *ductus literarum* the alteration is
 most easy, for Quartos as well as Folios write both 'foyle'
 and 'foile', 'coyle' and 'coile' indifferently, and an f, negli-
 gently written, or damaged in printing, could be easily taken
 for a c. At all events, thus much seems certain that if the old
 editions had read 'mortal soil', nobody would have taken the
 least exception to this reading, and the most presumptuous of
 emendators would never have so much as dreamt of proposing
 'mortal coil' for 'mortal soil'. (*Shakespeare-Jahrbuch* II, 362.)

 XCIII.

Ham. So long? Nay then, let the devil wear black, for
 I'll have a suit of sables.

HAMLET, III, 2, 136 SEQ.

In the Shakespeare-Jahrbuch XI, 294 seq., I have tried to show that the contrast between a suit of sables and a mourning garment does not so much lie in the color as in the costliness and splendor of the material. In accordance with the immemorial Biblical usage of mourning in sackcloth and ashes, mourning garments to this day are made of coarse and dull-coloured material, whereas for a suit of sables the most gorgeous and brilliant stuff was selected. Since I wrote that note I have, however, come across some passages in our Middle High-German poets, from which it would appear, that usually garments of brightest colour, especially scarlet and green, were trimmed with sable, so that the contrast between a suit of sables and a black mourning garment would be complete even as to colour. I subjoin these passages in their original wording.

1. Seyfried Hellbling, XIII, 179 (Haupt, Zeitschrift für deutsches Alterthum, Leipzig, 1844, Vol. IV, p. 214): —

Wirt mir niht *scharlach* unde *zobel*

ez wirt mir eins gebüren hobel

von ein guoten Pölungere.

2. Maier, Helmbrecht 1343 — 1352 (Haupt, Zeitschrift für deutsches Alterthum, Vol. IV, p. 366): —

Der dritte sac, der ist vol,

ûf und ûf geschoppet wol,

fritschâl brûnât, vêhe veder

dar under zwô, der ietweder

mit *scharhlêt* ist bedecket,

und dâ für gestrecket

einez, heizet *swarzer zobel*:

die hân ich in einem tobel

hie nâhen bî verborgen;

die gibe ich ir morgen.

3. Parcival, herausgegeben von Lachmann, 63, 24: —
Grüne samît was der mandel sîn:
 ein *zobel* dâ vor gap *swarzen* schîn.

It seems that our ancestors — as far as they belonged to the Upper Ten Thousand — delighted in these brilliant garments, particularly in the contrast between bright-coloured materials and dark sable-trimmings.

XCIV.

For use almost can change the stamp of nature,
 And either the devil, or throw him out
 With wondrous potency.

HAMLET, III, 4, 168 SEQQ.

This is the reading of the quarto of 1604. The later quartos read: —

And master the devil, or throw him out,
 whilst in the first quarto, as well as in the folios, the passage is wanting. Whether we follow QB, or its successors, the second line is incomplete and the editors therefore have properly endeavoured to fill it up. Believing the copyist or compositor of the second quarto to have been deceived by the similarity of the sound of two successive words I formerly suggested: —

And either *usher* the devil, or throw him out.

(The Athenæum, Aug. 11, 1866, 186.) Although Messrs Clark and Wright, in their annotated edition of the play, are likewise of opinion 'that something is omitted which is contrasted with *throw out*', yet I have now come to the conviction that most likely such an antithesis was not in the poet's mind, but that his thoughts turned exclusively on the fact that by constant habit the vicious stamp of nature may be reformed. The

reading most likely to have come from the poet's pen seems therefore to be: —

And *either master* the devil or throw him out.

It is true, there is some slight tautology in it, but a tautology which is by no means foreign to Shakespeare. The compositor of the second quarto, I imagine, overlooked the second, those of the later quartos overlooked the first word of the two. As to the metre, I cannot agree with those critics who think it necessary that a monosyllable should be added after *either*. e. g. *curb* or *wean*. S. Walker (*Versification*, 75) is quite right in scanning: —

And either master th' devil [pronounce de'il], &c.

XCV.

They aim at it,

And botch the words up fit to their own thoughts.

HAMLET, IV, 5, 9 SEQ.

'The quartos', to use the words of Messrs Clark and Wright in their annotated edition, 'have *yawne*, doubtless a misprint from *ayme*, as the word is spelt in the first and second folios. *Aim* means here *to guess*, as in *Romeo and Juliet*, I, 1, 121: —

I aim'd so near when I supposed you loved.'

It may be questioned, however, whether we have the right word. May not *yawne* in the quartos be a misprint from *gape* just as well as from *ayme*? Compare K. John, II, 1, 375 seq.: —

As in a theatre, whence they gape and point

At your industrious scenes and acts of death.

(*The Athenæum*, Aug. 11, 1866, 186.)

XCVI.

The rabble call him lord;
 And, as the world were now but to begin,
 Antiquity forgot, custom not known,
 The ratifiers and props of every word,
 They cry, 'Choose we; Laertes shall be king!'

HAMLET, IV, 5, 102 SEQQ.

As no appropriate sense can be made out of 'the ratifiers and props of every word', though this is the uniform reading of the old editions, Warburton conjectured *of every ward*, Johnson, *of every weal*, and Tyrwhitt, *of every work*. None of these conjectures, however, is a real improvement on the text. I have no doubt that we should read *of every worth*, which would at once remove all difficulty. As far as worth is concerned, Laertes would be a proper person indeed to be elected king. But the king is not to be chosen, as in primeval times, for his worthiness alone; antiquity and custom come in for their share also; they are 'the ratifiers and props of every worth'. — Compare Thomson's Seasons, III, 943 seq.: —

At home the friend

Of every worth and every splendid art,
 and IV, 468: —

Thee, Forbes, too, whom every worth attends.

(Shakespeare's Hamlet, herausgegeben von Elze, Leipzig, 1857, 230. — The Athenæum, Aug. 11, 1866, 186. — Shakespeare's dramatische Werke nach der Uebersetzung von Schlegel und Tieck, herausgegeben von der Deutschen Shakespeare-Gesellschaft, VI, 177.)

XCVII.

Who, dipping all his faults in their affection,
 Would, like the spring that turneth wood to stone,
 Convert his gyves to graces.

HAMLET, IV, 7, 19 SEQQ.

The corruption of this passage does not lie in *gyves*, as Theobald and others have imagined, but in *graces*. How can *gyves*, a very material object, be converted into abstract *graces*? Not even the Knaresborough spring can effect such an illogical conversion. The context, in a word, will not bear an abstract noun in this place, which would entirely spoil the metaphor. Logical symmetry indeed might be restored, if *gyves* were replaced by an abstract noun, but the comparison then would be deprived of all force, of all sensible, not to say palpable, distinctness and Shakespeare would certainly never have introduced the Knaresborough spring in order to compare two abstract qualities. *Gibes* which has been proposed instead of *gyves* is fairly insufferable. I feel convinced that we ought to correct *graces* to *graves* (according to modern orthography *graves*), which, at the same time, would give the verse a regular flow. According to the Folio, *graves* occurs in another passage of the poet, that, in some respect, bears a surprising similarity to ours, viz. 2 Henry IV, IV, 1, 50: —

Turning your books to graves, your ink to blood.*

In both passages something feeble or despicable is to be turned into *graves*, which not only form part of chivalric

* In this line *graves* has an obelus in the Globe Edition. Warburton conjectured *glaves* which has been highly commended by Dr Ingleby in the Shakespeare-Jahrbuch, II, 220, whereas in his Shakespeare Hermeneutics, 61, he feels much less certain. *Glaves* is not a Shakespearean word and *graves*, in my opinion, is the true reading.

armour, but, at the same time, are emblems of knighthood. Who does not recollect Homer's ἐὺχρῆμιδες Ἀχαιοί and Chapman's *fair greaves* (Iliad XVIII, 415)? *Gyves*, in our passage, stands of course metonymically for those crimes and misdemeanours which ought to be punished by them, *graves* metonymically for those merits and signal deeds, which ought to be rewarded and distinguished by them, or, in a word, which ought to be knighted. The simile of the spring becomes most appropriate if we remember that gyves were originally made of wood. It is true, that in order to render it perfect, graves should have been made of stone instead of steel; but so far it may be conceded that *omne simile claudicat*. *Graves* is, to all appearance, a sophistication of the compositor who hesitated at the unusual word *graves*, provided it be not a simple mistake, which is still likelier. As to the orthography, *graves* instead of *greaves* is quite analogous to *thraves* (for *threaves*) and *stale* (for *steale* or *stelt*); compare Mr Hooper's note on Chapman's Iliad XI, 477; Chapman's Iliad IV, 173 and Nares s. *Stelt*. On the other hand, *hames* in South Warwickshire becomes *eames* according to Mr Halliwell-Phillipps, Dict. Arch. and Prov. Words, and Mrs Francis, South Warwickshire Provincialisms (in Original Glossaries &c. ed. by Walter W. Skeat for the English Dialect Society). (The Athenæum, Feb. 20, 1869, 284. — Shakespeare-Jahrbuch, XI, 295 seq.)

 XCVIII.

Where be his quiddities now, his quillets, his cases, his tenures, and his tricks?

HAMLET, V, 1, 107 SEQQ.

Tenures undoubtedly stands in the wrong place: it is by no means synonymous with quiddities, cases and tricks, but belongs to the law-terms relative to the acquisition and transfer of property, and should accordingly be inserted four lines *infra*, between *recognisances* and *fincs*. This suspicion is strongly confirmed by the Quarto of 1603, in however crude a state the passage may be given there. That this edition reads *tenements* instead of *tenures* is of no importance, inasmuch as our concern lies only with the position of the word, and in this respect it shows the right text. The passage there runs thus: 'Where is your quirks and quilletts now, your vouchers and double vouchers, your leases and freehold, and tenements?' (The Athenæum, Feb. 20, 1869, 284.)

 XCIX.

Woul't drink up esile? eat a crocodile?

HAMLET, V, I, 299.

It is a matter of surprise to me that after all that has been written on this line there should still be found so many defenders of the old reading (QB *Esill*, FA *Esile* — not to speak of *vessels* in QA). Several critics have justly observed that it would not only be 'tame and spiritless', but 'inconsistent and even ridiculous' (Nares s. v.) to make Hamlet dare Laertes to drink 'large draughts of vinegar' in a scene whose every line is teeming with emphasis and hyperbole — nay, even bombast: and it was reserved for Al. Schmidt (Shakespeare-Lexicon s. *Esill*) to think such ludicrous rant was to the purpose. 'Hamlet's questions', says Al. Schmidt, 'are apparently ludicrous, and drinking vinegar, in order to exhibit deep grief by a wry face, seems much more to the

purpose than drinking up rivers.' This is even less acceptable than the explanation given by Theobald, that Hamlet means to say, 'Wilt thou resolve to do things the most shocking and distasteful? and behold, I am resolute.' The other passages in which 'eysell' is mentioned do not bear in the least on the line under discussion; 'eysell' being there only spoken of as a medicine (thus e. g. in Sonnet CXI) or as 'an ingredient of the bitter potion given to our Saviour on the Cross' (Hunter, Illustrations, II, 263); nowhere is drinking eysell mentioned as a feat of courage and strength — as it would seem to be in the present passage. Mr Moberly assures his readers that 'a large draught of vinegar would be very dangerous to life' — he might have added that roast crocodile would not be a very wholesome dish either. This is certainly so far-fetched and tame a thought, that Shakespeare cannot have been guilty of it; it reminds the reader involuntarily of Capell's humorous remark that 'if Eisel be the right reading, it must be because 't is wanted for sauce to the crocodile.'

There are critics who would willingly give up the vinegar and side with those who are convinced that 'esile' is meant for a river, if it were not that in their opinion a Danish river must be referred to, or at least one that is not too far removed from Denmark; in default of a Danish river they are ready to put up with the Polish Weisel* or the Dutch Yssel, but they strongly object to the Nile as being at variance with the scenery of the play. This ill-founded objection has been refuted by Dr Furness who justly observes that Shakespeare 'who did not hesitate to make Hamlet swear by St. Patrick, would have been just as likely to mention a

* Does this form of the name occur elsewhere or has it been coined for the nonce? I greatly suspect the latter.

river in farthest Ind as in Denmark, if the name flashed into his mind, and would have been intelligible to his audience.' It may be added that the Nile is (and was) no less known in Denmark than in any other European country; I cannot conceive why the mention of so world-renowned a river should be inappropriate in the mouth of a Danish prince; but if so, the dramatic unity is just as much violated by the crocodile; in order to be consistent these critics should substitute some Danish — or at least some Baltic — beast for the crocodile. It may be safely asserted that Shakespeare never cared for Danish, Polish, or Dutch rivers, and that the name of a Danish river in this passage would indeed be the last that could have come from his pen.

It was certainly not only allowable to Shakespeare to introduce the Nile without violating the locality of his play, but it can be easily shown that he had the strongest motives for so doing. The grief of Laertes at the untimely and tragical death of his sister is uttered with such an emphasis that Hamlet cannot refrain from objecting to such obstreperous woe and from overawing him who utters it; he entirely gives the rein to hyperbole and bombast; he challenges Laertes to do whatever feat he may to express his sorrow and to be assured that he, Hamlet, will do the same, nay, more. Nothing can be more intelligible, more explicit: —

And, if thou prate of mountains, let them throw
Millions of acres on us; till our ground,
Singeing his pate against the burning zone,
Make Ossa like a wart! Nay, an thou'lt mouth,
I'll rant as well as thou.

One of the feats thus enumerated is drinking up the Nile, a feat than which nothing can better befit the occasion, as the Nile was considered in the days of Elizabeth not only

as the home of wonders and monsters, but also as the mightiest, nay, even as a measureless stream; our poet himself in *Titus Andronicus*, III, 1, 71, says: —

And now, like Nilus, it disdaineth bounds.

Besides, drinking up a river, or even the ocean, is an hyperbole very familiar to Elizabethan poets. Various passages have been quoted in support of these facts, both by English editors, and myself in my edition of this play; and I am now able to increase their number. The vast extension of the Nile is extolled by Marlowe in the first Part of *Tamburlaine*, V, 2 (ed. Dyce, 36b): —

Which had ere this been bath'd in streams of blood,
As vast and deep as Euphrates or Nile.

In the same play, Part 1, II, 3 (ed. Dyce, 15a) the poet makes *Tamburlaine* say: —

The host of Xerxes, which by fame is said
T' have drunk the mighty Parthian Araris,
Was but a handful to that we will have.

In the second part of *Tamburlaine*, III, 1 (ed. Dyce, 54a) *Orcanes* even mentions Nilus itself: —

I have a hundred thousand men in arms:
Some, that in conquest of the perjurd Christian,
Being a handful to a mighty host,
Think them in number yet sufficient
To drink the river Nile or Euphrates.
And for their power enow to win the world.

Can it be doubted that Shakespeare was acquainted with these passages? He who is known to have inserted in the second part of his *K. Henry IV* (II. 4) the famous lines from the second part of *Tamburlaine* (IV, 3): —

Holla, you pampered jades of Asia,
What, can you draw but twenty miles a-day?

In Dawbridgecourt Belchier's Invisible Comedy of Hans Beer Pot (London, 1618, E, 3c) we meet with these lines: —

Enough my ladde, wilt drink an Ocean?
Methinks a whirlpool cannot ore drinke me.

Edward III, III, 1 (ed. Delius, 39): —

By land, with Xerxes we compare of strength,
Whose soldiers drank up rivers in their thirst.

Lochrine, IV, 4 (Malone's Supplement, II, 246; Hazlitt, Supplementary Works, 93; Doubtful Plays, Tauchn. Ed., 179): —

O what Danubius now may quench my thirst?
What Euphrates, what light-foot Euripus
May now allay the fury of that heat,
Which raging in my entrails eats me up?

Chapman's Revenge for Honour, III, 2 (The Works of George Chapman: Plays, edited, with Notes, by Richard Herne Shepherd, London, 1874, 433b): —

Sol. Let go round:
I'd drink 't, were it an ocean of warm blood
Flowing from th' enemy.

Delius, ad loc., gives it as his opinion that all difficulties would be removed, if the reading of the old editions was: —

Woo't drink up Nilus? eat a crocodile?

but he finds it difficult to believe that so familiar a word as *Nilus* could have been sophisticated into *russels*, *Esill*, and *Esile*. To me this seems to be a *cura posterior*: provided we have got the right word, the word which is imperatively required by the context, we need not trouble ourselves with the inquiry as to how the corruption may have crept into the text. It is certainly very gratifying and adds to the force of an emendation if we are able to show the origin of the corrupted reading, but there are many passages in Shakespeare and his contemporaries where such an endeavour is,

and ever will be, vain, whereas the emendation itself cannot be doubted. Let any one try to explain the printers' mistakes that are committed even at this day! Many of them may certainly be accounted for by a foul case and in other ways, but no less a number will still baffle all explanation. Or has a critic ever yet been able to explain how the famous *Vlorva* found its way into the text? Yet who will defend it?

There remain two points still to be mentioned. First the words *drink up*. Notwithstanding what has been said to the contrary by Dr Furness and others, I still believe that this phrase means something more than simply 'to drink'; the preposition *up*, in my opinion, 'conveys the sense of totality or completeness' to use Mr Grant White's words; *up*, says Al. Schmidt, s. v., 'imparts to verbs the sense of completion, by indicating that the action expressed by them is fully accomplished.' I feel convinced that 'to drink up', to say the least of it, is applied much more fitly to a river than to vinegar. The parallel passages cited above are eloquent on this head too; I only refer to the lines in Edward III: —

Whose soldiers drank up rivers in their thirst;
and in *The Jew of Malta*, V, 4 (ed. Dyce, 178b): —

As sooner shall they drink the ocean dry.
'To drink up Nilus' is, in my opinion, equivalent to 'to drink Nilus dry.'

My second, — and last, — remark is on the crocodile. If drinking up Nilus (that 'disdaineth bounds') be conceded to be an hyperbole of the first water as it expresses a pure impossibility, it may be objected, that eating a crocodile would be a rather weak anticlimax and could not be placed on a level with the first-named feat of strength. I cannot admit such an objection to be just. Eating a crocodile is no less an impossibility on account of its impenetrable scales

which our poet's contemporaries imagined to be not only spear-proof, but even cannon-proof.* In *Lochrine*, A. III, init. Ate says: —

High on a bank, by Nilus' boisterous streams,
 Fearfully sat the Egyptian crocodile,
 Dreadfully grinding in her sharp long teeth
 The broken bowels of a silly fish:
 His back was arm'd against the dint of spear,
 With shields of brass that shone like burnish'd gold.

Another passage brings us still nearer to Shakespeare, viz. I *Tamburlaine*, IV, 1 (ed. Dyce, 25a): —

While you, faint-hearted, base Egyptians,
 Lie slumb'ring on the flow'ry banks of Nile,
 As crocodiles that unaffrighted rest,
 While thund'ring cannons rattle on their skins.

Now let Laertes try his teeth on such a skin!

In short, my conviction, that Shakespeare wrote: —

Woul't drink up *Nilus*? eat a crocodile?

is more confirmed than ever it was before.

C.

That handkerchief

Did an Egyptian to my mother give;

* The source of these hyperbolical descriptions may be found in the forty first chapter of *Job*, where we read: 'The sword of him that layeth at him [viz. leviathan] cannot hold: the spear, the dart, nor the habergeon. He esteemeth iron as straw, and brass as rotten wood. The arrow cannot make him flee: slingstones are turned with him into stubble. Darts are counted as stubble: he laugheth at the shaking of a spear.' — Compare also *Job* XL, 23: 'Behold, he [viz. behemoth] drinketh up a river, and hasteth not: he trusteth that he can draw up Jordan into his mouth.'

She was a charmer, and could almost read
 The thoughts of people: — —
 'T is true: there's magic in the web of it:
 A sibyl, that had number'd in the world
 The sun to course two hundred compasses,
 In her prophetic fury sew'd the work;
 The worms were hallow'd that did breed the silk;
 And it was dyed in mummy which the skilful
 Conserved of maidens' hearts.

OTHELLO, III, 4, 55 SEQQ.

A parallel passage which as far as I know has never been referred to occurs in Ben Jonson's *Sad Shepherd*, II, I: —

But, hear ye, Douce, because ye may meet me
 In many shapes to-day, where'er you spy
 This browder'd belt with characters, 't is I.
 A Gypsan lady, and a right beldame,
 Wrought it by moonshine for me, and star-light,
 Upon your grannam's grave, that very night
 We earth'd her in the shades; when our dame Hecate
 Made it her gaing night over the kirk-yard,
 With all the barkand parish-tikes set at her,
 While I sat whyrland of my brazen spindle:
 At every twisted thrid my rock let fly
 Unto the sewster, who did sit me nigh,
 Under the town turnpike; which ran each spell
 She stitched in the work, and knit it well.
 See ye take tent to this, and ken your mother.

Can it be doubted that this is an imitation, by which Jonson intended, more or less, to ridicule Shakespeare? Gifford, of course, would never have acknowledged it. (*Shakespeare-Jahrbuch*, XI, 299 seq.)

ADDENDA.

XX.

There is, perhaps, a third way of scanning the line: —

Mountney and Valingford, as I heard them named,
namely, by contracting 'Mountney and' and beginning the
verse with two trochees: —

Mountn' and | Váling | ford, ás | I heard them nám'd.

Lines beginning with two trochees are by no means unusual;
compare, e. g., Marlowe, 1 Tamburlaine, I, 2 (Works, ed.
Dyce, 9a): —

Duke of Africa and Albania.

Marlowe, The Massacre at Paris (Works, ed. Dyce, 245 b): —

Tell me, surgeon, and flatter not — may I live?

Arden of Feversham, III, 5 (ed. Delius, 45): —

How now, Alice? What, sad and passionate?

Ibid. III, 5 (ed. Delius, 49): —

Go in, Bradshaw, call for a cup of beer.

Milton, Samson Agonistes, 443: —

By th' idolatrous rout amidst their wine.

As to the contraction 'Mountney and' it is much more allowable than some readers would readily believe. Such 'swallowing or eating up one letter by another when two vowels meete, whereof th' ones sound goeth into other' is reckoned among the 'auricular figures' by Puttenham, The Arte of English Poesie, ed. Arber, 174. He gives two instances, viz. *l' attain* for *to attain*, and *sov' and smart* for

sorrow and smart. Puttenham closely connects this figure with what he calls the ‘figures of rabbate’ (p. 173), of which he discerns three different kinds, viz. ‘from the beginning, as to say *twixt* for *betwixt*, *gainsay* for *againesay*, *ill* for *euill*; from the middle, as to say *paraunter* for *paraenture*, *poorety* for *pouertie*, *souraigne* for *soueraigne*, *tane* for *taken*; from the end, as to say *morne* for *morning*, *bet* for *better*, and such like.’ All this ‘swallowing’ and ‘rabbating’, however harsh it may sound in modern ears, is authorised as customary and legitimate by Puttenham; in fact, similar contractions most frequently occur in the works of Elizabethan dramatists and even in Milton; thus, e. g., Fair Em, ed. Delius, 8 (Simpson, II, 416): —

Mariá | na, I háve | this day | receív | ed lét | ters.

Ibid. Delius, 35 (Simpson, II, 447): —

Yea and Wil | liam’s too, | if hé | deny’ | her mé,

and: —

My sór | rows afflic | my soú | with é | qual pás | sion.

Milton, Samson Agonistes, 362: —

Ordaín’d | thy núr | ture hó | ly, as óf | a plánt.

Ibid. 378: —

The mýs | tery’ | of Gód | given me ún | der plédge,
although a different scansion of this last line may be admissible, viz.: —

The mýs | t’ry óf | God giv’n | me ún | der plédge.

With respect to the line: —

But, Valingford, search the depth of this device,
we may, perhaps, remove the difficulty by expunging *But*, so that there would be no occasion for supposing ‘Valingford’ to have been sometimes pronounced as a dissyllable.

It is, of course, no very difficult task to find in ‘Fair Em’ many other passages which have been corrupted from

metre to prose. Let me notice only a few. First, the following lines in A. III, Sc. 1 (Delius, 26; Simpson, II, 430 seq.): —

Marq. Hard hap, to break us off our talk, so soon!
Sweet Mariana, do remember me! [E.vii.]

Mar. Mariana* cannot choose but remember thee.

Enter BLANCH.

Blanch. Mariana,
Well met. You're very forward in your love.

Mar. Madam,

Be it in secret spoken to yourself:

If you'll but follow th' complot I've invented, &c.

The lines that follow I do not know how to set right and therefore resume, some eight or nine lines lower down: —

The next time that Sir Robert shall come here**
In's wonted sort to solicit me with love
I'll seem t' agree and like of anything
That th' knight shall demand, so far forth as it be
No impeachment to my chastity; t' conclude,
I will appoint*** some place for t' meet the man,
For my conveyance from the Denmark court.

Another passage of the same kind occurs soon after (Delius, 27; Simpson, II, 437), viz. the speech of William the Conqueror beginning: 'Lady, this is well and happily met.' Simpson most felicitously adds *for* before *Fortune* and justly remarks that *sinister* is to be pronounced as a dissyllable (*sin'ster*). Thus metre is restored throughout, except in the first line, and even here it may be easily recovered by the addition of *sweet* before *lady*. Compare Fair Em, ed. Delius, 19

* Both Delius and Simpson read 'Thy Mariana', in accordance, I have no doubt, with the old editions. ** For the word *here* I am answerable. *** Delius reads: 'and to conclude, appoint some place,' &c.; Simpson: 'And, to conclude, point some place,' &c.

(Simpson, II, 428): Sweet lady, for thy sake. *Ibid.*, ed. Delius, 25 (Simpson, II, 435): Sweet lady, cease, &c. The passage, therefore, should be printed: —

Sweet lady, this is well and happily met;
 For Fortune hitherto hath been my foe,
 And though I 've often sought to speak with you,
 Yet still I have been cross'd with sinister haps.
 I cannot, madam, &c.

The most conspicuous instance, however, of verse turned to prose, is A. II, Sc. 2 (according to Delius, 19 seqq., or A. II, Sc. 6 according to Simpson, II, 428 seqq.). I transcribe the whole scene in metre, in which shape, in my conviction, it came from the author's pen: —

Mar. Trust me, my Lord, I'm sorry for your hurt.

Lub. Granercy, madam; but it is not great,
 Only a thrust, prick'd with a rapier's point.

Mar. How grew the quarrel, my Lord?

Lub. Sweet,* for thy sake.
 There was last night** two maskers*** in our company,****

Myself the foremost; the others strangers were
 'Mongst which,† when th' music 'gan †† to sound the
 measures,

Each masker made choice of his lady; and one,
 More forward than the rest, stept ††† towards thee;

* Both Delius and Simpson: 'Sweet lady'; according to the latter, Chetwood proposed the omission of 'lady'. ** Simpson: 'this last night'. *** Delius: 'masques'; Simpson: 'masks'. According to Delius, XI, the correction 'maskers' is due to Chetwood. **** Delius and Simpson: 'in one company'; the correction was made by Simpson in a note. 'Company' is, of course, to be pronounced as a dissyllable. † Delius and Simpson: 'amongst the which'. †† Delius and Simpson: 'began'. ††† Delius: 'steps'.

Which I perceiving
 Thrust him aside and took thee out* myself.
 But this was taken in so ill a** part
 That at my coming out of*** the court-gate,
 With justling together, it was my chance to be
 Thrust into th' arm. The doer thereof, because
 He was th' original cause of the disorder,
 At th'**** inconvenient time, was presently
 Committ'd, and is this morning sent for hither†
 To answer th' matter; and here, I think, †† he comes.

Enter WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR with a JAILOR.

What, Sir Robert of Windsor? How now!

Wm Conq. I' faith, ††† a prisoner; but what ails your

Lub. Hurt by mischance last night. †††† [arm?

Wm Conq. What? Not in the mask at the court-gate?

Lub. Yes, trust me, there.

Wm Conq. Why then, my Lord, I thank you for my

Lub. And I you for my hurt, if it were so. [lodging.⁰

Keeper, away!

I here⁰⁰ discharge you of your prisoner. [*Exit Keeper.*

Wm Conq. Lord Marquess!

You offer'd me disgrace to shoulder me.

Lub. Sir!

I knew you not, and therefore pardon me,⁰⁰⁰

* For 'out' I am responsible. ** 'A' was first added by Chetwood. *** Delius: 'out at'. **** Delius and Simpson: 'At that inconvenient.' † For 'hither' I am responsible. †† Delius and Simpson: 'I think here'. ††† Delius and Simpson: 'I' faith, my Lord'; the latter, however, remarks in a foot-note: 'Dele *my Lord*'. †††† Delius: 'Hurt last night, by mischance'; Simpson: 'Hurt the last night, by mischance.' ⁰ Delius and Simpson: 'my night's lodging.' ⁰⁰ 'Here' added by the present writer. ⁰⁰⁰ Delius and Simpson: 'you must pardon me.'

And th' rather* as** it might be alleged to me
 Of mere simplicity, to see another
 Dance with my mistress, disguis'd, myself*** in presence.
 But seeing it was our haps**** to damnify
 Each other unwillingly, let's be content
 With both† our harms and lay the fault where 't was,
 And so be †† friends.

Wm Conq. P' faith, I am content with my night's lodging,
 If you be ††† with your hurt.

Lub. Not †††† that I have 't,
 But I 'm⁰ content to forget how I came by 't.

Wm Conq. My Lord,
 Here comes the⁰⁰ lady Blanch, let us away.

Enter BLANCH.

Lub. With right good will.⁰⁰⁰ [*To Mariana*] Lady,
 [will you stay?]

Mar. Madam — [*Exeunt William the Conqueror and
 Lubeck.*]

Blanch. Mariana, as I'm grievèd with thy presence,
 So am I not offended for thy absence,
 And, were it not a breach to modesty,
 Thou shouldest know before I left thee. [madness!]

Mar. [*Aside*] How near this humour is akin⁰⁰⁰⁰ to

* Perhaps it may be thought preferable to expunge 'And' and to write: 'The rather'. ** 'As', inserted by the present writer. *** Delius and Simpson: 'and I myself.' **** Qy. read, 'hap'? † 'Both' added by the present writer. †† Delius and Simpson: 'become'. ††† Delius and Simpson: 'if you be content.' †††† Delius and Simpson, 'Not content.' ⁰ 'I'm' added by the present writer. ⁰⁰ 'The' added by the present writer. ⁰⁰⁰ Delius and Simpson: 'With good will.' Compare, Fair Em, ed. Delius, 30, l. 9; Simpson, II, 441, l. 7. ⁰⁰⁰⁰ Delius and Simpson: 'Is this humour to madness.' 'Akin' has been added by the present writer.

If you hold on to talk* as you begin.
You're in a pretty way to scolding.

Blanch. To scolding, huswife?

Mar. Madam, here comes one.

Enter a MESSENGER with a Letter.

Blanch. There does indeed. Fellow, wouldst thou
Have anything with anybody here?

Mess. I have a letter to deliver to the Lady Mariama.**

Blanch. Give it me.

Mess. There must none but she have it.

[Blanch snatcheth the Letter from him.]

Blanch. Go to, foolish fellow. *[Exit Messenger.]*

And, therefore, to ease the anger I sustain,

I'll be so bold to open it. What's here?

'Sir Robert greets you well!'

You, mistress, his love, his life? Oh, amorous*** man,

How**** he his new mistress entertains,

And on his old friend Lubeck doth bestow †

A horned †† nightcap to keep in his wit.

Mar. Madam,

Though you discourteously have ††† read my letter,

Yet, pray you, †††† give it me.

Blanch. Then thake it, there, and there, and there.

[She tears it. Exit Blanch.]

* For 'to talk' I am responsible. ** The Messenger speaks in prose. *** 'Amorous' to be pronounced as a dissyllable. **** 'How' is to be considered a monosyllabic foot. Or are we to read: 'How his new mist(e)ress he entertains'? Or: 'How he his *newest* mistress entertains'? Delius and Simpson: 'entertains his new mistress.' † Delius and Simpson: 'and bestows on Lubeck, his old friend.' †† Delius and Simpson: 'A horn nightcap.' ††† Delius and Simpson: 'have discourteously.' †††† Delius and Simpson: 'I pray you'.

Mar. How far doth this differ from modesty!
 Yet I will gather up the pieces, which,
 Haply, may show to me th' intent thereof,
 Though not the meaning.

[*She gathers up the pieces and joins them.*

[*Reads.*] 'Your servant and love, Sir Robert of Windsor, alias William the Conqueror, wisheth long health and happiness.'

Is this then* William the Conqueror
 Shrouded** under th' name of Sir Robert of Windsor?
 Were he the monarch of the world, he should
 Not dispossess my*** Lubeck of his love.
 Therefore I'll to the court, there,**** if I can,
 Close to be friends with Lady Blanch, thereby†
 To keep my love, my Lubeck,†† for myself,
 And further the Lady Blanch in her own††† suit,
 As much as e'er†††† I may.

XXIV.

After the third line of the passage beginning: —

Infortunate Valingford, &c.

there is no doubt a gap which should be stopped by some such line as the following: —

yet ne'ertheless

I fairly hope, all will be well again:

I am acquainted &c.

* 'Then' added by the present writer. ** 'Shrouded' is to be pronounced as a monosyllable; compare Abbott, Shakespearian Grammar, 472. *** For 'my' the present writer is responsible. **** Delius and Simpson: 'and there.' † Delius and Simpson: 'and thereby.' †† Delius and Simpson: 'keep Lubeck, my love.' ††† 'Own' added by the present writer. †††† For 'e'er' I am responsible.

In the next passage the words *prosperity*, *expectation*, and *Sweet Em*, may be retained by the aid of contractions, and by the introduction of a short line: —

Sweet Em, I hither came to parle of love,
 Hoping t' have found thee in thy wont'd prosper'ty;
 And have the Gods
 Thwart'd so unmerc'fully my expectation,
 By dealing so sinisterly with thee,
 Sweet Em?

Em. Good sir, no more; &c.

These are certainly harsh verses and 'vile' contractions (to borrow this epithet from Polonius), but we must take them as we find them. Perhaps, however, these and all similar lines should not be scanned in the ordinary way; and it may be doubted whether they are not rather constructed after the model of Early English verse, where only the accented syllables are counted, whereas the number of the unaccented ones is more or less indefinite.

XXVI.

There is another, and perhaps preferable, way of arranging the lines in question, viz. thus: —

Wm Conq. Hence, villains, hence!
 How dare you lay your hands upon your sovereign!*

Sol. Well, sir, we'll deal for that!
 But here comes one will remedy all this.

* Or, according to Simpson: —

Dare you to lay your hands upon your sovereign!

XXX.

I cannot dismiss the Comedy of 'Fair Em' without adding a few more corrections. In the third scene (Delius, 8; Simpson, II, 416) we read as follows: —

King Dem. Mariana, I have this day receivèd letters
From Swethia. that lets me understand
Your ransom is collecting there with speed,
And shortly hither shall be sent to us.

Mar. Not that I find occasion to mislike
My entertainment in your Grace's court,
But that I long to see my native home.

Evidently there is something wanting here; Mariana's speech should begin with a line somewhat to the following effect: —

It glads my heart to hear these joyful tidings;
Not that I find occasion to mislike, &c.

Instead of 'to mislike', which is an emendation by Simpson, the quarto of 1631 reads 'of mislike'; Delius, 'to misliking'.

Farther on, (Delius, 36; Simpson, II, 448) we meet with this passage: —

Dem. Pardon, my dread lord, the error of my sense,
And misdemeanour to your princely excellency.

Wm Cong. Why, Demarch, what is the cause my subjects
are in arms?

Dem. Free are my thoughts, my dread and gracious
lord,

From treason to your state and common weal.

There are no differences in the readings, except that Delius puts a semicolon after 'Demarch' and a comma after 'cause'. The substitution of 'excellence' (pronounced as a dissyllable) for 'excellency' in the second line seems to be indispensable

to the restoration of the metre. The words 'Why, Demarch' form an interjectional line; and in the last line we should insert the definite article before 'common weal.' The whole passage, therefore, ought to be printed: —

Dem. Pardon, my dread lord, th' error of my sense,
And misdemeanour to your princely excellence.

Wm Cong. Why, Demarch,
What is the cause my subjects are in arms?

Dem. Free are my thoughts, my dread and gracious lord,

From treason to your state and th' common weal.

Another difficulty is raised by the line in A. V, Sc. 2 (Delius, 45; or A. III, Sc. 17 according to Simpson, II, 457): —

And think you I convey'd away your daughter Blanch?
which may be reduced to a blankverse in three different ways. The first expedient is to omit *And* and to contract *you I*: —

Think you I' | convey'd | away | your daugh | ter Blanch?
Compare Addenda No. XX and No. XXIV. Secondly, *away* might be expunged: —

And think you I convey'd your daughter Blanch?

In support of this alteration the following line from *Fair Em* (ed. Delius, 39; Simpson, II, 451) may be quoted: —

Saying, I conveyed her from the Danish court,
whilst, at the same time, it would correspond to the expression 'to steal' or 'to steal away' which is used repeatedly in this scene in respect to the elopement of Lady Blanch. The third way is the omission of *Blanch*: —

And think you I conveyed away your daughter?

Your daughter Blanch occurs five lines lower down, and also at the end of a verse; it seems, therefore, not unlikely that

these words have been inserted in the line under discussion through faulty anticipation.

The last passage on which I wish to make a remark occurs on page 46 of Delius's edition (Simpson, II, 459): —

Dem. May it please your highness:

Here is the lady you sent me for.

The metre evidently requires the addition of *whom*: —

Here is the lady *whom* you sent me for.

THE END.

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA
AT

New Shakspeare Society's Transactions,

1877-8.

NOTICES OF MEETINGS.

THIRTY-THIRD MEETING, FRIDAY, APRIL 13, 1877.

PROFESSOR KARL ELZE of Halle, one of the Vice-Presidents of the Society, on taking the chair, said :—‘Ladies and Gentlemen :—Before entering on the business of the evening, I cannot but express my sense of the flattering compliment that has been paid to me by the invitation to take the chair on the present occasion ; for, to preside over a meeting of an English Shakspeare Society in Shakspeare’s own country is an honour of which a foreigner may well be proud. I do not, however, presume to attribute this honour to myself and my own slight merit, I rather attribute it to the German sister society, and to German Shakspeare-learning, and German literature at large. I need not dwell on the well-known fact, which has no parallel in the whole history of literature, that Shakspeare has found a second home in Germany, and that he is admired and cherished by us as much as any of our own great poets. A German critic has said, that Shakspeare cradled our infant drama ; and there can be no doubt whatever that within ten years after his death German alterations of some of his plays were being acted in the principal courts and towns of Germany, however rude and repulsive those alterations may appear to the more refined taste of the present age. Since that time Shakspeare has shared all the vicissitudes, all the ups and downs of our litera-

ture, just like our own classic poets. All the foremost poets, critics, and scholars of Germany have done their best to bring him nearer, not only to our understanding, but also to our hearts and sympathies. It is hardly too much to say that the works and names of Lessing, Goethe, Schlegel, Tieck, Gervinus, and numerous others will be entwined for ever with the work and name of Shakspeare. The present generation follows in the wake of these great leaders; and in some ill-advised quarters it is even a matter of complaint, that there is now no end in Germany of translations, of editions, of criticisms and essays on Shakspeare. The simple fact that in a few days the twelfth volume of the German Shakspeare Annual will be ready for delivery, seems to me a sufficient proof, not only of the earnestness and energy with which these studies are pursued, but also of the immeasurable compass and the inexhaustible depth of the subject.

‘But it is by no means as an inexhaustible source of textual and æsthetic criticism, of literary research and antiquarian lore, that we prize Shakspeare most. He would never have taken that prominent and lasting hold of our stage, where he is a successful competitor with Goethe and Schiller, if we did not take him for one of the greatest dramatic poets—if not *the* greatest dramatic poet—that ever lived; for a poet of the liveliest and sweetest imagination, and of an unparalleled creative power; for a poet of the widest intellectual grasp; for a heart-searcher who never had his like; and last, not least, for a teacher of mankind who inculcates the noblest and most elevated moral lessons, who fills our hearts with the love of wisdom, truth, and virtue, with noble aspirations, with loving-kindness and charity. He is indeed a Jacob’s ladder to everything that is right, and honest, and true, and beautiful all over the world; and I am happy to say, that the conviction of his moral purity and elevation, in spite of some outward appearance to the contrary, is daily gaining ground with all civilized nations, and is uniting them in bonds of sympathy. Thus then Shakspeare does not only prove a teacher of mankind, but also a golden link of human brotherhood. In this respect, as in many others, he is like nature, whose touch “makes the whole world kin.” And it is in this sense that I may be allowed

to feel myself kin to you and to all Shakspeare's countrymen; and I should be much afraid of wronging you, if I did not feel convinced that you reciprocate this feeling.'

The new Members announced were: Signor Pagliardini, Prof. J. J. Lias, Prof. E. H. Smith, E. S. Cox, Mrs W. R. Bullock, Bradford Literary Club, and J. Mackenzie Miall.

The Papers read were:—

I. On the Character of Brutus in the play of *Julius Cæsar*, by Peter Bayne, Esq.

II. On the Division of the Acts in *Lear*, *Much Ado*, and *Twelfth Night*, by James Spedding, Esq., M.A., Honorary Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge.

I. Setting out with the remark that the impartial dramatic sympathy of Shakspeare (which enabled him to enter the heart and speak from the mouth alike of Cordelia and of Iago) made it difficult to discern his personal sentiments, Mr Bayne suggested one or two criteria by which his views as a man might be discovered in his works as an artist. One of these was the general impression left on the mind by a particular drama: we might generally be sure that what we felt strongly was what Shakspeare intended us to feel. Another was his choice of subjects, and his mode of deciding between issues presented on the stage. When, for example, Shakspeare chose for treatment "perhaps the most momentous issue ever fought out in this world, that between Cæsar and Brutus," we may believe that his adhesion to the cause of popular right, as opposed to unlimited personal sovereignty, was indicated by his decision that the action of Brutus was heroic. Quoting, as applicable to the early Romans as well as to the Greek, these words of Grote—"The hatred of kings . . . was a pre-eminent virtue, flowing directly from the noblest and wisest part of their nature,"—Mr Bayne argued that Shakspeare, though no classical scholar, evinced a more accurate conception of the moral and patriotic ideal of the ancients in making Brutus the hero of his play, than those clerical scholars "who, influenced by modern ideas, affirmed that those who slew Cæsar were guilty of a great crime." Even in his weaknesses, the Brutus of Shakspeare was represented as noble. He expected to find others as good as himself, a fatal mistake in practical affairs, and trusted for influence upon masses of men to reason and logic rather than to rhetorical art. Antony, therefore, who, as compared with him, was a political charlatan, got the better of him. Mr Bayne illustrated at some length the position that Shakspeare always represented the multitude as foolish and childish, but, at the same time, recognized the soundness of their instincts, and the readiness with which they responded to any appeal to their gratitude and courtesy. That Shakspeare had an exceptional and superlative regard for the character of Brutus, Mr

Bayne argued, from the careful elaboration of the scenes with Portia and with the boy Lucius,—scenes to which there is nothing parallel in Shakspeare's treatment of men,—and from the estimate of Brutus put into the mouth of Antony, his enemy :—

“ His life was gentle ; and the elements
So mix'd in him, that Nature might stand up,
And say to all the world, *This was a man !* ”

II. Mr Furnivall then read : 1, some notes by Prof. Dowden on the opening bridal song in the *Two Noble Kinsmen*, showing that the flowers in it were emblems of wedded life ; 2, a paper, by Mr James Spedding, “ On the Division of the Acts in *Lear*, *Much Ado*, and *Twelfth Night*.” Mr Spedding insisted that in *Lear* time must be given for the great battle in Act V. sc. ii. to be fought, and that, therefore, the end of Act IV. must be moved forward to the *exit* Edgar in the present V. ii., while Act V. must begin with Edgar's re-entrance. In *Much Ado*, Mr Spedding would end Act I. with its first scene ; start Act II. with the present I. ii., and end it with II. ii. ; open Act III. with Benedick in the garden, the present II. iii. ; and begin Act IV. in Hero's dressing-room, the present III. iv. In *Twelfth Night*, Mr Spedding proposed to end Act I. with the present I. iv. ; Act II. with the present II. ii. ; and Act III. with the present III. i., the fourth and fifth Acts ending where they do now. In *Richard the Second*, the first Act should end with its third scene instead of its fourth. By these changes the present incongruities would be removed.

The thanks of the Meeting were voted to the writers for their Papers. In the discussion on the first Paper Messrs Furnivall, Wedmore, Matthew, Hetherington, and Pickersgill took part.

After the other business of the evening was ended, Mr Furnivall rose and said : ‘ Altho' it is not customary to return a vote of thanks to our Chairman when one of ourselves is in the Chair, yet on an occasion like to-night's, when we are honoured with the presence of one of the most distinguished Shakspeare scholars of Germany, the editor of their Shakspeare Society's Year-book, the friend of our friend Professor Delius—who has been twice among us and thrice sent us Papers for our *Transactions*,—I feel that you will all wish to return to Professor Elze your thanks for presiding over us to-night, and speaking to us those generous words in praise of our great Poet with which he opened our Meeting. It is a heart-felt pleasure to every English Shakspeare-student, to know that in Germany, the poet he loves and honours has been made the nation's own, and that every German scholar who visits our shores, brings with him reverence and love for Shakspeare. Our own Society owes Germany no common debt. When we started, Germany had for eight years had her Shakspeare Society, which is now in its 12th year, while we are in

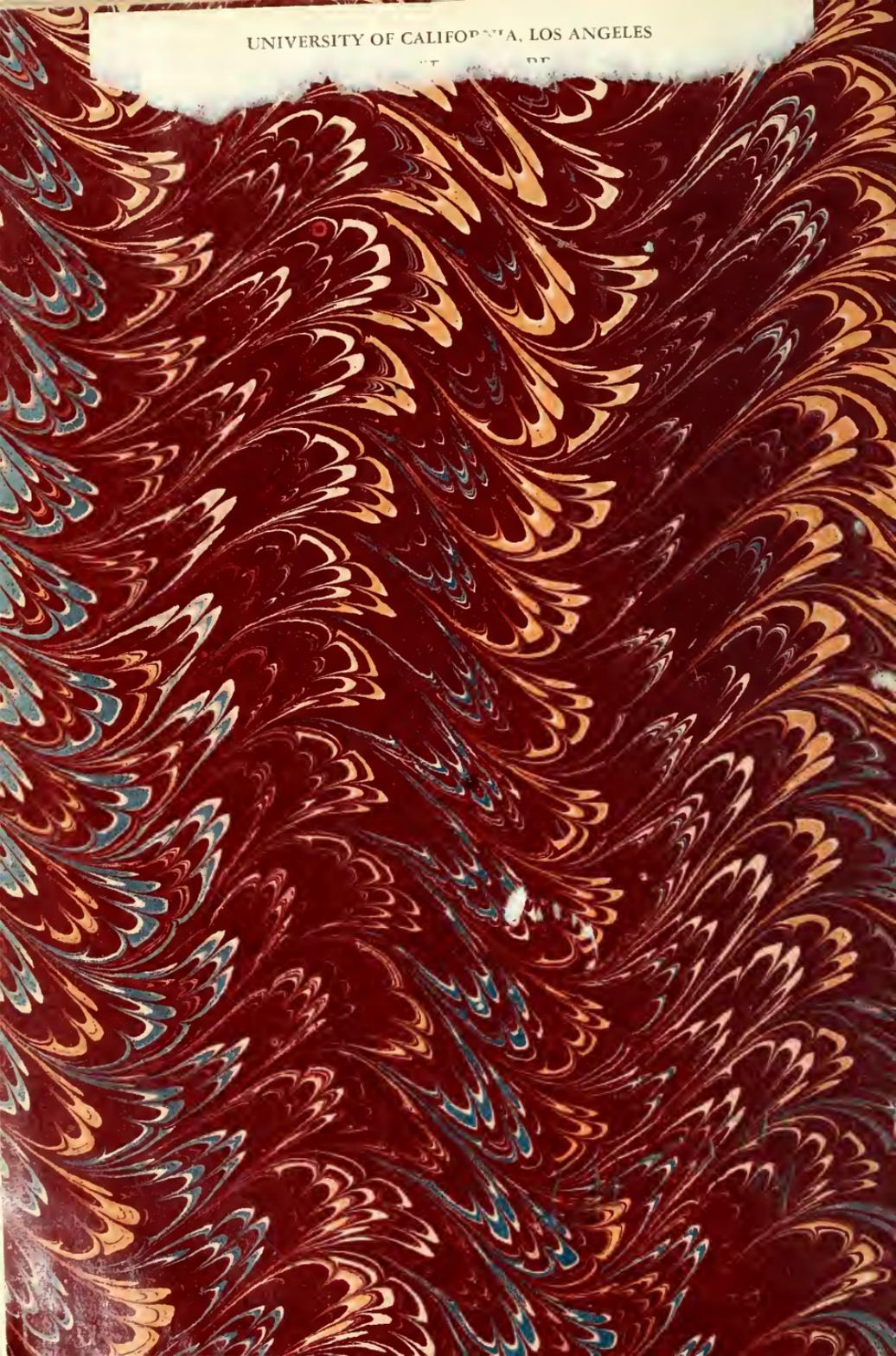
our 4th. It was from German ground that our Society mainly started:—the insisting that Shakspeare be graspt and treated as a whole, the workings of his mind followd from its rise to its fall, and that,—as our member Miss Hickey puts it,—each Play be studied, not only as one of Shakspeare's works, but as part of his work. Our Prospectus from the first has contained the paragraph—

“The profound and generous ‘Commentaries’ of Gervinus—an honour to a German to have written, a pleasure to an Englishman to read—is still the only book known to me that comes near the true treatment and the dignity of its subject, or can be put into the hands of the student who wants to know the mind of SHAKSPEARE.”

‘And though now we have works that can stand beside Gervinus's, yet none the less do we still give him the post of honour among us. Prof. Delius's text of our poet has also just been reprinted in London. Our Chairman's Essays on Shakspeare have been enlight. And I am sure he knows that no insular narrowness mixes with the feeling with which we return thanks to him, the first German scholar who has presided over us, the representative to us of that nation, great in learning and great in war, our own kith and kin, which has in our own time so splendidly asserted its love for its fatherland, as well in the battle-field, as in the realms of literature and science, the conquests of peace.’

The vote of thanks was carried with applause, and Professor Elze bowd his acknowledgment.

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, LOS ANGELES









L 005 489 274 0

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



AA 000 371 881 4

